This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

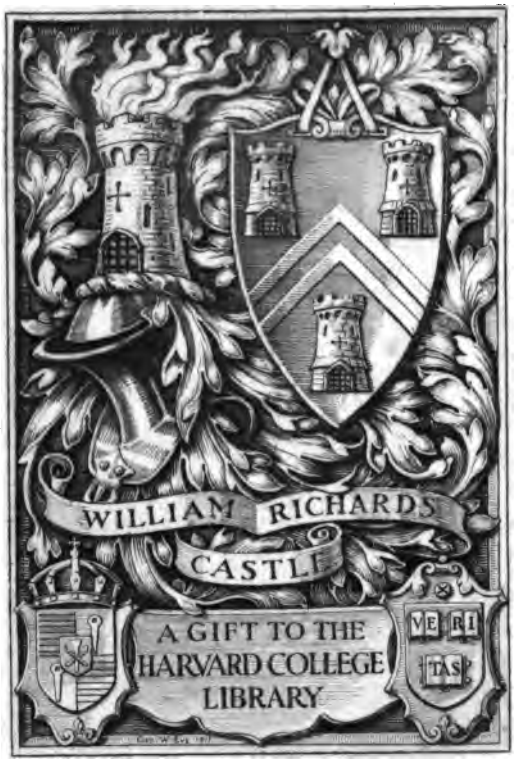
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

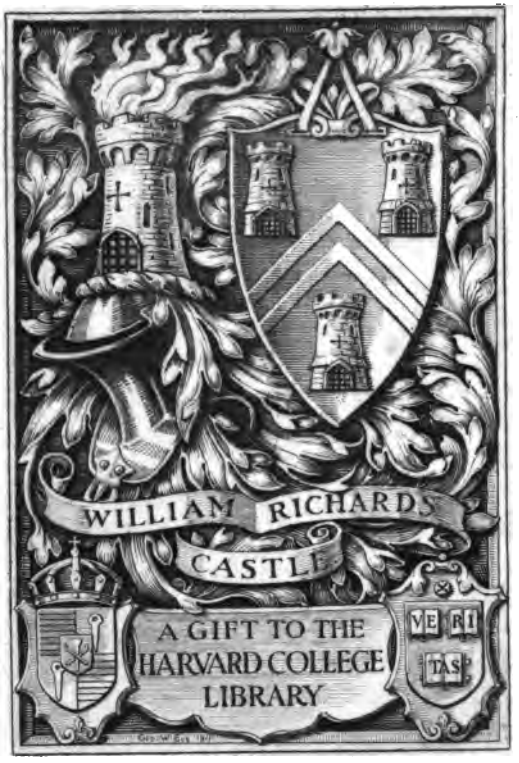
25

Ce 7608.56


WILLIAM RICHARDS
CASTLE
A GIFT TO THE
HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY
VE RI
TAS

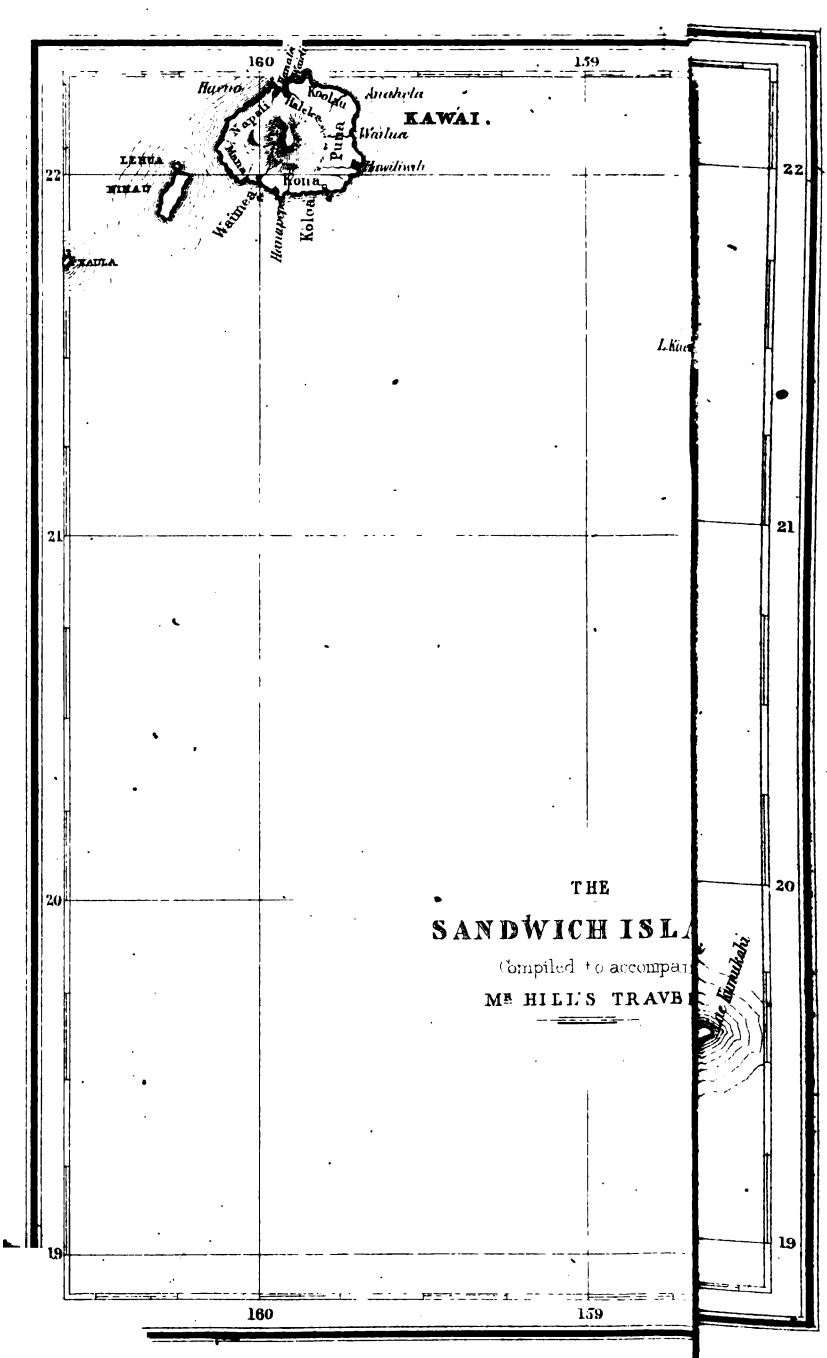
25

Qe 7608.56


WILLIAM RICHARDS
CASTLE
A GIFT TO THE
HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY
VE RI
TAS

SANDWICH ISLANDS.

SANDWICH ISLANDS.


160
159
Harna
Anahola
KAWAI.
Wailua
Puna
Kona
Koloa
Waimea
LEHUA
NIHAU
KAULA
22
21
20
19
THE
SANDWICH ISL
Compiled to accompa
Mr HILL'S TRAVB

TRAVELS

IN THE

SANDWICH AND SOCIETY ISLANDS.

BY

S. S. HILL, Esq.

AUTHOR OF "TRAVELS IN SIBERIA," ETC.

"When empire in her childhood first appears,
A watchful fate foresees her rising years."

DRYDEN.

LONDON:
CHAPMAN AND HALL, 193 PICCADILLY.

1856.

(The right of Translation is reserved.)

Oc 7608.5
HARVARD COLLEGE
JAN 23 1913
LIBRARY
Sabin fund

LONDON:
Printed by G. Barclay, Castle St. Leicester Sq.

PREFACE.

As I am not at liberty to suppose that any one must necessarily be acquainted with the earlier sections of a narrative to which this volume forms a continuation, it is proper to inform the reader that the following chapters comprise a third, but distinct, part of an account of travels which I have previously brought up to my departure from the coast of Kamtschatka on board the good whaler-ship Josephine, bound on a voyage intended to embrace a period of whale-fishing in a lower latitude, and to terminate at the Sandwich Islands.

My chief endeavour in the present volume has been to exhibit a picture of an isolated portion of the great human family, in a stage

of progress of peculiar interest, since it is that which, at one period or other, has in every Christian state, formed the first step from barbarism towards those degrees of refinement which older nations have severally attained.

When the natives of the Sandwich Islands held their earliest intercourse with Europeans, they seem, indeed, to have been in a condition of society not very unlike that of the inhabitants of our own Britain when the Romans first landed on these shores; and their present state of advancement is probably about the same as that of the Britons at the time when their most barbarous customs were just giving place to changes for which Roman refinement opened the way.

Two reasons have suggested the introduction of the short historic sketch which precedes the proper matter of the volume. The first of these is, the difficulty of giving anything like a just picture of the natives of the islands at the present day, unaccompanied by some

sort of review of their condition, as well before as after, their first intercourse with Europeans. The second is, the belief that the importance which the rapid growth of so many new countries on the shores of the Pacific Ocean must shortly give to the Sandwich Islands in particular, renders such a notice desirable in every account of them.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

VOYAGE FROM KAMTSCHATKA TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS 1

CHAPTER II.

VOYAGE FROM KAMTSCHATKA TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS—(*continued*) 19

CHAPTER III.

NATURAL HISTORY OF THE ISLANDS, AND ORIGIN OF THEIR INHABITANTS 32

CHAPTER IV.

INSTITUTIONS, ARTS, AND CUSTOMS, OF THE ISLANDERS 44

CHAPTER V.

SKETCH OF THE PROPER HISTORY OF THE ISLANDS 68

CHAPTER VI.

PAGE
HONOLULU 95

CHAPTER VII.

HONOLULU—(*continued*) 107

CHAPTER VIII.

THE ISLAND OF MAWHEE 121

CHAPTER IX.

VOYAGE TO OWHYHEE—WAIMEAR 143

CHAPTER X.

VISIT TO KARAKAKOOA BAY 161

CHAPTER XI.

VICINITY OF KARAKAKOOA BAY 178

CHAPTER XII.

JOURNEY BETWEEN KARAKAKOOA BAY AND KAILUA-KAILUA 193

CHAPTER XIII.

VISIT TO A COFFEE ESTATE 211

CHAPTER XIV.

PAGE
BOAT VOYAGE FROM KARAKAKOOA BAY TO KAILILI 223

CHAPTER XV.

JOURNEYS TO WHYHOHINO AND THE VOLCANO OF KILAUEA 241

CHAPTER XVI.

THE VOLCANO OF KILAUEA 261

CHAPTER XVII.

JOURNEY FROM THE VOLCANO TO HILO 281

CHAPTER XVIII.

BYRON'S BAY AND HILO 291

CHAPTER XIX.

HILO 303

CHAPTER XX.

HILO—(*continued*) 319

CHAPTER XXI.

HILO—(*continued*) 331

CHAPTER XXII.

PAGE
HONOLULU 348

CHAPTER XXIII.

VOYAGE FROM THE SANDWICH ISLANDS TO OTAHEITE 366

CHAPTER XXIV.

OTAHEITE 374

CHAPTER XXV.

VOYAGE FROM OTAHEITE TO VALPARAISO 395

APPENDIX.

SANDWICH ISLANDS—DECLARATION OF RIGHTS . . 407

TREATIES BETWEEN HAWAII, FRANCE, AND GREAT BRITAIN 417

TAXATION IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS 422

MUTINY AND MASSACRE AT SEA 424

TRAVELS

IN

THE SANDWICH AND SOCIETY ISLANDS.

CHAPTER I.

VOYAGE FROM KAMTSCHATKA TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

Departure from Kamtschatka—Appearance of the Coast—Auspicious Signs—Fine Weather—Rigour of the Climate—Sudden Change—Loss of Sails—Ship under bare Poles—Seamen confined below—Shift of Wind—Dangerous Condition of the Ship—State of the Barometer—Gale increased to a Typhoon—Phosphoric Light, so called, on the Water—Appearance of the mysterious Light described by Ariel in the "Tempest"—Composition and Character of the Light—Stroke of the Sea—Cessation of the Gale—Our Occupations during the Gale—Character of Sailors—Alteration in our Voyage.

THE western breeze which had brought us out of the bay of Avasha continued. The sea was but little agitated, and when the sun dropped beneath the snow-capped mountains of Kamtschatka, not a cloud nor vapour broke the outline of the vast features of the view which the

rude shores presented. As we stood contemplating the magnificent spectacle, the breeze gradually grew lighter and lighter, just as it happens in lower latitudes on a summer's evening; and, as the stars appeared one by one, from those of the first magnitude to those which the full night present, we ventured to hope, from these propitious signs, that we should have a fine run off the dangerous land, and a prosperous transport to the latitudes where the navigator's cares comparatively speaking cease.

These favourable auguries were the more welcome to us, on account of the particular character of the coast and the climate, combined with the lateness of the season, the 27th of November, at which we sailed. The precursor storm, which invariably announces the setting-in of winter in high latitudes, as well on the eastern shores of Asia as on those of America, and which is always dead on shore, was hourly expected; while it was twelve days later than any ship had at any time before quitted any part on this coast.

Before midnight the breeze again freshened, and it blew a gentle gale through the night; and, at eight o'clock the next morning, we were by the reckoning about sixty miles from the land. The breeze continued throughout the secondday; and such was the clearness of the atmosphere, that when we were considerably more than a hundred miles from the shore, we could

plainly distinguish the highest peaks of the giant mountains in the vicinity of the bay of Avasha.

During the next two days and nights we had a gradual increase of wind, continually fair, with the same unchanged and cloudless sky; and, at the hour of sunset on the 1st of December, nothing save the blowing of a few whales, and the snow and ice which still covered our decks, remained to remind us that we were in a more rigorous climate than that of the northern coast of Britain in mid-winter. About this time, when we were 400 miles from the port we had left, from which we had steered nearly due south, without regard to our proper course, that we might the more speedily change our latitude, and with the coast of Japan lying about the same distance west of us, the wind became unsteady and very light, and the weather altogether exhibited symptoms of a great change being at hand. The sea, too, which had been following us from the north-west as steadily as a summer swell, seemed now to be met by a cross-sea running from the eastward. These signs are as well known to the navigators of these regions to indicate a breaking-up of the fine weather, as they are known to the inhabitants on shore to be the signal of the approach of the storm which unfailingly breaks on the coast at this season; and we began to shorten sail before the day closed. The sky, too, was for the first time

entirely obscured; yet, until near midnight, there was but little wind, which blew, however, at intervals from all points of the compass between west and north-east. But about that hour, after several short lulls, a strong gale from the east, accompanied by a heavy swell, came suddenly down upon us with so much force, that it became necessary to furl every sail with the utmost expedition; and the ship was now hove-to under her storm-staysails, with her head towards the north. Scarcely, however, was this manœuvre accomplished, before the gale augmented in violence, reducing our staysails to shreds, and defying every further effort of the seamen to retain any government over the vessel's movements. Snow, too, now accompanied the wind, which still augmented at every gust, until the ship, thrown half on her side, with a heavy sea running, and under her mere bare poles (as seamen call their masts when no canvas is spread), swept bodily before the gale, at the rate of four or five knots an hour.

The seamen, whose presence on deck was no longer of any avail, and very dangerous to their safety, all now, at the command of the captain, ensconced themselves beneath the hatches in the forecastle, and the officers retired to the cabin, leaving nothing open abaft, save a portion of the top of the companion. The worst was, the little hope we entertained of a change; for

our barometer, upon which the captain had great reason to rely, indicated that the gale was increasing in force; and the occasional mere wash of the tumbling waves, as they passed under us, warned us of the consequences that must follow the ship's receiving the full stroke of the sea on her side. She rose, however, to the top of the waves, as they rapidly followed one another, and sank again into the hollows between them, with such undeviating regularity, during the whole of this night, that if our masts only stood, we had little doubt of weathering the gale.

But about day-break on the morning after the change of weather, while the glass was still falling, a new danger threatened us. The tempest before which we were driving had been preceded, as is very commonly the case at sea, by a swell from the same quarter, which had easily put down that which had attended the north-west wind, and the sea had since run regularly before the gale. In the mean time, when we first hove-to, our ship's head was placed to the northward, under the impression of it being most likely that the wind, if it changed, would haul to the southward; in which case we should head the sea, while it continued to run in the same direction as before, instead of receiving it, as we must necessarily do in the opposite case, upon our broadside. But the wind suddenly shifted to the north-east, and the sea was now

hove up into pyramids, and ran with such violence, and irregular course, that the ship laboured heavily, falling sometimes by her bow, and as often stern foremost, into the pits and hollows between the seas, and was in danger of foundering. The barometer, too, still indicated that the force of the wind was still augmenting.

Aloft, we already presented the appearance of a perfect wreck. The gale at the beginning, having come on with such suddenness, none of the sails had been very nicely furled or handed, and the greater part of them were already blown from the masts or from the yard-arms up to the very reef-points, so that the fragments hanging in ropes' ends and shreds served to increase the resistance offered to the wind, and to keep the ship down on her side.

After another hour or two, the sea became more regular, but the barometer, now at 29°, was still falling, and the force of the wind augmenting. If terror, as some in search of the origin of our impressions seem to have discovered, be the true source of the sublime, there was now strife enough among the elements to whose fury we were exposed, to touch us with the most elevated sensations. The tenants of the cabin knew nothing of those of the forecastle, but from time to time, we severally crept up the companion-ladder to endeavour to find some sign of the tempest abating. The snow, which had

accompanied the wind when the gale commenced, no longer fell; but nothing was visible in any direction beyond the tops of the nearest seas that rolled around us, which the wind converted to spray and mist that limited the vision to three or four hundred yards on all sides around. Such, indeed, was the effect of this wild commotion of the elements, that I was tempted to keep my place at the companion for an hour at a time, to watch the seas that followed or broke ahead of us, one single wave of which, had the masts gone, which would have lessened our drift and brought the ship upright, would have sufficed to overwhelm us in a moment: for it was by the wake left in our drift, causing the waves to break or turn to foam and mist, that the wind drove over us in too light a form to damage any portion of our hull, and the rapidity with which the ship drifted while on her side, that she was protected from the crash of the furious seas that broke around her.

No change took place during the day that succeeded the night upon which the tempest commenced. We continually watched the barometer with the utmost anxiety. Still it fell; and the day closed without any symptoms of the wind abating. But during the middle watch of the night, soon after it had been observed that the barometer had fallen $28\frac{25}{100}$, we had the

opportunity of witnessing an extraordinary phenomenon. I shall endeavour to describe it as it presented itself to us, with the addition of some information I accidentally acquired concerning its character.

I had been some time standing or holding on alone upon the upper step of the companion-ladder, occupying the weary time in watching the breaking heads of the foaming waves that successively robed the waters with a sparkling mantle like a hoar-frost, that was visible through the darkness which obscured every other object, when I was suddenly struck with amazement at seeing a light aloft. I gazed upon the strange apparition for a moment or two, with too great astonishment to admit of any exercise of the reason, or of recalling to mind any thing I had seen or heard of, resembling it, and, perhaps, not wholly free from such ecstasy, as, at a time like the present, might be natural even to the coldest temperament among us. It would have been in vain to attempt to give notice of this appearance, to any one below, without descending the ladder, on account of the noise made by the wind and the sea. But at the moment I was about to descend to the cabin, I found our second mate by my side, arrived in search of some sign of the tempest abating. I instantly pointed out to him the flaming stranger, now in rapid motion upon the

mast in front of us, and upon the higher of the yards. The mate, however, saw the light without partaking of my surprise; and, indeed, had scarcely called it by its sea name, "jack-o'-lantern," before I recognised the phenomenon, which I had often enough heard of, yet, though I had weathered out many a winter gale, I had never seen before; and which has, perhaps, never been so distinctly described as in one especial instance which now came to my recollection. No description, indeed, of any natural phenomenon that I know of, might more exactly present to our minds the image of anything not before our eyes, none more vividly represent that which we now saw, than the account given by the tricksy spirit Ariel, of his own appearance during his performance of his part in the storm in the first act of the "Tempest," which has no doubt often passed for a pure creation of the poet's fantasy rather than for an illustration of a remarkable natural phenomenon:—

"I boarded the king's ship: now on the beak,
Now on the waist, in every part,
I flam'd amazement: sometimes I'd divide,
And burn in many places; on the topmast,
The yards, and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly,
Then meet and join: Jove's lightnings, the precursors
O' the dreadful thunder-claps, more momentary
And sight-out-running were not."

* * * * * *

As we gazed upon the flaming light, it at

first appeared as if it were stationary in respect to the masts and yards, which we could not perceive, and only in motion on account of the movement of the ship when she rolled to leeward and partially rose again as the swell, after passing under her, left her sinking into the hollows between the running seas. It was presently, however, apparent, that the mysterious light was in rapid motion along the ship's masts and yards, and that it was sometimes on the mainmast, which it ascended and descended with the rapidity of thought, and sometimes upon the lee and weather yard-arms, along which it played horizontally. But once or twice, as the ship rolled more suddenly to leeward, it appeared to quit the top of the mast, or the yard-arms, yet quickly to re-attach itself, as the vessel rolled again towards the direction in which it flamed. At other times, as if it were cut by the rigging in its rapid flight across the yards or upon the mast, it was divided into several parts, which quickly united again after quitting the extremities of the yards or masts.

That which I heard and can confidently report concerning this light, and which may be new to many, if not to all, even of those who have actually seen it, was related to me by the officer who witnessed the curious phenomenon with me on this terrible night. He had navigated these seas for many years, and he assured

me that its appearance in these latitudes was very frequent, and that the seamen on board the whalers often gave chase to it upon the masts during gales of wind of less violence than that which we experienced. He informed me, indeed, that he had himself taken it at the top of the mast, where it was flaming and playing off and on. He said it appeared to emit but a dull light when approached, and that, when touched, it was found to consist of a substance of a clammy nature, and of little solidity, which caused a smarting sensation to the hand, and that it was scarcely visible when exposed to the light.

By midnight the tempest seemed to have reached its utmost fury, when our barometer had sunk down to $27\frac{25}{100}$. About this time, while our judgments were hovering between hope and despair, the chief officer, who was the oldest sailor on board, after mounting the ladder and descending, gave it as his opinion that the ship would not weather the gale. At these words of despair, the first that were uttered, the captain and one of the mates mounted the ladder also, and I followed them as soon as I could detach myself from the sofa, to which I was lashed. There was now nothing to be seen save the light called phosphoric, which, as before, rendered only the foaming seas visible, amidst the profound darkness

which obscured every other object. In my own judgment I had not much confidence; I wished merely to observe what change might have taken place, but I could perceive none. The captain descended without uttering a syllable, but the mate said, "I have weathered a typhoon in her before," and then descended also.

The most trying moment we experienced occurred soon after this. We were now all below. The captain was on his sofa in his state-room, the door of which was still open, while the chief mate and myself remained attached each to one end of the sofa in the cabin, and the two other mates were lying on the cabin floor to leeward, when one of the seas, the stroke of which we had so much dreaded, partially struck us, and turned its foaming head upon our deck.

But it may be as well, as every one is not acquainted with the language of the ocean, to explain what is meant by seamen when they speak of the stroke of the sea. Sometimes the waves during a violent gale are long, or, in other words, the spaces between them wide in proportion to their height, and they run regularly, but often it is otherwise. When they are regular and long, the ship, if under any government at all, is hove-to, under the close-reefed maintopsail, or one or more storm-staysails. In this position she rises majestically,

with her head partially turned towards the heaving seas, and bows again and falls into the hollow between them, as they successively pass under her. But, owing to her first receiving the force of the sea in this case upon her weather-bow, she falls off from the wind as she rises, so that, when in the trough of the sea, she has her side turned directly towards the next wave. At this time, however, she increases any little headway she may owe to the smallest sail under which she is lying-to, which gives power to the helm, which now brings her again sufficiently to the wind to receive the sea upon her weather-bow as before. In this state of things there is but little danger. The sea cannot bodily strike the ship, for she is always ready, and rises as gradually as majestically to the approaching swell. Nor is it very likely she will be even struck by the curling top of the wave, which, on account of the pace at which the swell runs, is generally left upon the back, if it may be so termed, rather than running down the front of the wave, as it is seen upon a bar or beach. There are several modifications, however, of this condition of the sea during a storm, which subject a vessel, even when lying-to, to be dangerously struck by its full force. The sea may run too short to give the ship time to rise, owing to the suddenness with which the gale came on, or a shift of wind

may throw the waves up into pyramids, which tumble over with such irregularity that, in case of the vessel not coming quickly to the wind, and heading the sea, they may strike her side, or, falling on board, sweep the decks, and endanger the safety of the ship. When, however, all power over the ship is lost, by the impossibility of setting sail, if the sea is short and irregular, the vessel is continually exposed to its stroke, and to imminent danger of foundering. Our case was the worst that could occur. We had had no government over the movements of the ship from the beginning, and, in consequence of the sudden manner in which the gale came on, the sea was short in proportion to its height and the rapidity with which it ran, and very irregular, on account of the sudden change of wind which had taken place during the storm, which had thrown up the waves in the manner just mentioned. Thus there was constant danger of the sea bodily striking the ship, or of the curling top of a wave falling on board of us.

Hitherto we had escaped the chief and secondary danger; but now the sea partially struck the ship and fell on board of her. The concussion was terrible, and for a few moments all seemed lost. The ship staggered, as if she were broken to pieces, and the water rushed down the companion with such force as to leave us uncertain whether we were already

buried in the deep, or had yet a hope left of being saved. But we were not long in this position before the water ceased to pour down, and that which was in the cabin, now finding its way to the half-deck, enabled us to reach the top of the companion-ladder; to which we hastened, in the hope of discovering the amount of the injury we had received, and the nature of the new perils to which we might be exposed. The ship was still driving rapidly upon her side, but nothing, far or near, was to be seen, save the foaming seas, which the luminous properties of the ocean still rendered visible on every side around.

About an hour after this, while the wind seemed undiminished, and the sea still threatened to complete our disasters by one fell stroke, a slight rise of our barometer filled us with hopes we had hardly entertained since the gale began. Another hour, and the comforter that administered the first hope, confirmed the promising signs by a rise of two degrees, and before daybreak we perceived a sensible diminution in the force of the wind.

As soon as there was light enough to perceive anything upon deck, we found all our bulwarks gone fore and aft, and of seven boats which the whaler carried, five were smashed to atoms or gone overboard, the two remaining being saved only from having been placed

upon a frame set at ten feet above the ship's deck. But it was not yet possible for any one to keep the deck long enough to ascertain whether any planks were stove, or whether any more damage were done than was already apparent.

The wind continued to moderate, and by nine o'clock it had sufficiently abated to admit of our keeping the deck with caution. The waves were, however, running higher than ever, while the rapidity of the vessel's drift, which had secured her from the full stroke of the sea, was much diminished. An attempt was now made to set a storm-staysail to bring her head to the wind, but it was blown to shreds before it was half hauled out. Nevertheless, the wind still abated, and by twelve o'clock we were able to set this sail. At two, the men were busily occupied clearing away the wreck, and before this day closed we were once more before the wind, under such new sails as we were able to get bent, and running with the ship's head to the southward, before a long, rolling, unbroken sea. The stars now, too, once more appeared; and as we had been two nights without sleep, the ship was put under easy sail, that as many as possible of the crew might retire to rest. I must add, that our preservation was chiefly attributed to the buoyancy of our cargo of oil, which caused the rapidity of

the ship's drift, and gave the sea time to break in our wake, after the manner described.

The only *distraction* by which we were able to relieve the many weary hours we spent below during the tempest, without any light by day or by night, save the glimmer of a small lamp, which served, if possible, to increase the gloom, arose from a somewhat forced conversation, probably very different from that which many might think we were most likely to have indulged in. Those who have never been for a long time exposed to similar perils, might paint to their imaginations the hardy seamen of the whaler, full of impatience and round oaths, and a traveller wearying the master and his officers with questions, and listening with attentive ear, even for one word of hope or of consolation. But nothing would be further from figuring the effects of our condition than this. While we sat apart, or stood at times upon the companion-ladder, nothing was said save now and then a few words concerning imagined changes in the weather. But sometimes while we were assembled, seated upon the cabin deck, to eat our biscuits, which comprised all the food we were in a condition to obtain, the thoughts of the sailors wandered to rural scenes they had witnessed on shore, which suggested subjects for other remarks. They all referred with envy to the condition of the cultivators of the soil.

"How mad was I to embrace the life of the sea!" said one. "How happy should I have been," said another, "had I followed my father's calling, the best which my country offered, and been content to cultivate the land!" "Once more on shore," said a third, "I will never again put my foot on shipboard." But the sufferings of seamen during a storm have little enduring effects. While the gale rages, "Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea for an acre of barren ground — long heath, brown furze, — anything;" but the ship is no sooner under canvas again, than all their troubles are forgotten. The worst consequences of this storm to the ship and the crew was, the loss it caused by the captain being obliged to abandon the intention with which he had sailed, of prosecuting his whale fishing in the milder latitudes, on account of the loss of our boats; instead of which, therefore, he determined to steer directly for the Sandwich Islands.

CHAPTER II.

VOYAGE FROM KAMTSCHATKA TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS—(*continued*).

Treacherous Calm — Unfavourable Signs — Speculations upon the Action of the Wind—Stroke of the Wind—Effects of the Change—Violent Gale—Wind moderates—Description of a Ship lying-to—Description of wearing a Ship — Making Sail after a Storm — Observations to discover the Ship's Place—First Appearance of Birds—Occupations of the Crew—Passage of the Meridian of 180th Degree—Approach to the Sandwich Islands—Making the Land—Character of our Chronometers—Passage between two of the Islands—Appearance of the Land—Scenes on Shore—Arrival at Honolulu.

For twenty-four hours after we had fairly weathered the typhoon, or hurricane of the Pacific, the wind continued to moderate until we had again all sail set; and, at the approach of the second night after the gale, it almost suddenly fell calm. But a heavy rolling sea still ran from the north-east, which seemed to indicate that the weather continued stormy in that direction. Neither was there anything assuring in the appearance of the sky, which was covered

with heavy clouds, either stationary, or moving slowly in opposite directions.

We were now somewhat anxious and full of speculation concerning the quarter from which the next wind might blow, on account of the condition of the ship, and of that of the crew who were wearied out by total want of rest for forty-eight hours, and the necessary labour of clearing away the wreck and refitting, in which they had been since engaged. Our doubts and conjectures were not, however, of long duration. Before the close of the day, we perceived the clouds in such rapid motion, passing from west to east, above our heads, that we were warned of the necessity of preparing for a strong wind; and there remained nothing but the topsails, double-reefed, when we had plain notice that the elements were about to make good their threats. While all eyes were turned in the direction in which we expected the wind, a seaman on the watch in the maintop cried out, "Prepare for wind!" and presently the waves, still running high from the north-east, were observed turning their white heads, in the direction of the west, which was upon our starboard quarter as we lay. The topsail-halyards were now let go, and the seamen stood by the braces on both sides, waiting a second command.

I have often observed at sea, upon the breaking up of a calm, the length of time the wind

takes before it reaches the ship, after it has appeared, by its effects seen upon the water, to be close at hand. It has seemed to me sometimes that even a strong wind has been ten minutes or more passing over a space of only a few hundred yards; and this was never more apparent than now. The wind was evidently blowing half a gale, and coming directly towards us, while it seemed to make little progress in proportion to its force. How is this to be accounted for? Perhaps the space we look over may appear much less than it really is; or it may be, that we are deceived by false impressions concerning the rate at which the wind travels, which few can readily believe, when it blows a strong gale, is only sixty miles an hour. Or is it that the motion of the air is not in a straight direction, but rotatory, though not after the manner, which would be apparent in this instance, of the storms so called? These we might compare to the action of the millstone, which turns so rapidly without outward motion; but the course of the wind during the gale we might compare to that of the paddle-wheel of a steamer, which has a rotatory and at the same time an onward motion; which latter, as may be the case with the wind, bears no proportion in swiftness to the former. But we must, in this view of the matter, suppose the rotatory movement of the atmosphere to be the reverse of that of the paddle-wheel,

in relation to its onward movement. Be this, however, as it may, we stood astonished at the effects of our new-coming wind upon the sea, for a time before it reached us, that seemed disproportionate to its apparent strength. At length it struck the ship with such sudden violence, that she staggered as if she had received the stroke of the sea; and our masts would certainly have been carried away, had we not had warning in time to let go the topsail-halyards, and clew up the sails upon which its force would have fallen. Sailors often wish, when they are weary of a calm, that there were wind enough to blow the devil's horns off; and, certainly, if wind should ever deprive the arch-enemy of these appendages to his personal beauty, it will happen on such an occasion as this.

The gale which now reached us, was from the opposite quarter to that which had last blown; and before midnight, or less than forty-eight hours after the late storm had begun to moderate, we were again under our bare poles, without retaining the smallest government over the ship's course. Though the force of the wind, judging from our barometer, did not nearly equal that of the last gale, our condition for some hours was, if possible, more perilous than before, on account of the frightful character of the sea. This was now running in an opposite direction to the wind; and as the ship

lay over on her side, there was danger for some hours of one of the seas falling on board of her, and smashing in the decks.

All this night, and the next day, and a part of the next night, we remained exposed to nearly the same raging of the elements as before, with scarcely any difference in our condition, save that we were now drifting in a better direction.

It moderated again after midnight, on the second night of this gale, and by the next noon it was again calm. This second relief, however, was of little longer duration than the first, and was but the precursor of another gale, which lasted another thirty-six hours. On this occasion, however, we were able to lay the ship to, under a close-reefed maintopsail, and she now sat, as seamen say, like a duck upon the water. This seems to me to be the position of a ship in which she might, from a short distance, offer one of the most gratifying spectacles that could possibly be beheld. When thus riding over the seas in a gale, I have often longed to be in company with another ship, by which alone the noble spectacle might be contemplated, but was never so fortunate. The sight of a gallant bark, as she presents her prow to the mighty wave which seems to be about to sweep over her, and then gracefully bows again, descending into the hollow between the seas, cannot be equalled by

any other exhibition of the triumph of science and art over the obstacles which oppose our subjugation of the elements to our will.

After we had been lying-to for twenty-four hours, this gale also was succeeded by a profound calm, which was once more followed by such weather as brought us for the third time under our bare poles. This wind, however, which was from the northward, after commencing in the afternoon, began to moderate soon after daylight the next morning.

At the moment of our beginning to make sail again on this occasion, the position and movements of the ship afforded a most gratifying spectacle to us, even on board. The tremendous sea that was running after so long a period of tempestuous weather may be easily imagined. The wind was fair, and it had been a question whether the ship should be put before the gale; and this, in spite of the state of the sea, it was now determined to endeavour to accomplish. The helm was first put "hard a-weather," with the expectation that the ship would pay off, and be soon scudding before the gale, while it was doubtful whether we could yet show any canvas with a hope of its standing. The experiment, however, was thus far unsuccessful. The ship made no headway whatever, but continued to drift bodily to leeward as before. A part of the fore-topmast-staysail was

next hauled up, and now she answered her helm and paid off; and, as she came upon an even keel, she began to divide the waters in her swift course, without any other sail set, in a manner that afforded, until she was in the act of scudding before the gale, one of the noblest spectacles that our own ship can present to us.

In the morning after this change, when I came upon deck well refreshed by a good night's repose, we were still steering to the southward, and running before a fine top-gallant breeze from the north-west, and a heavy sea. Our captain's care was now to find the ship's place, no attention whatever having been given to the direction or extent of our drift during the prevalence of the storms. The navigators on board the whalers do not make use of the log-line and reel, nor have any recourse to the ordinary calculations called dead reckoning, save occasionally near the shore in thick weather, and in very narrow seas. They are always furnished with good chronometers, as well as the best nautical instruments; but sometimes, when engaged in fishing and boiling oil, they keep no account, and make no observations for weeks together.

We were very curious, after all the storms we had weathered, to know to what precise spot of the ocean we had been driven; and, as soon as the sun was within three hours of the meri-

dian we hastened to make our observations, and found we were in longitude 162° 30′ east, and at noon, by a meridian altitude, we found our latitude to be 47° 50′. Thus, after being a fortnight at sea, we were not 300 miles from the southern point of the peninsula of Kamtschatka. But we now altered our course, and steered in the direction of the south-east.

Up to this time we had seen no birds, but we were now accompanied by a number of speckled gulls. The appearance of birds about a ship, in a little-frequented part of the ocean especially, adds much to the cheerfulness which good weather never fails to bring with it, or relieves our weariness when the weather is bad. Our present winged companions found their account in accompanying us. They seemed at all times to discover something to feed upon in our wake; but whenever we pumped ship, as the water ran overboard carrying with it the oily matter that came from the hold, they appeared to enjoy such a feast as the mackerel-gulls find in the shoals of fishes they pursue.

As we approached the latitudes of the milder climates, our ship's deck during the whole day presented a busy scene. Every one on board was now occupied with his particular share in repairing the damage we had sustained, under the superintendence of the "old man," as the masters of the whalers are called by their crews,

whatever their age, and that of our "old man" did not exceed thirty years. He was, however, a great genius as well as a perfect sailor; and while occupied in directing the smiths, the carpenters, and the sailmakers, he turned with a lathe he possessed a very good set of chessmen from the white jaw-bone of the whale, with no other guide than a drawing I made of the pieces and pawns.

The next incident of our voyage was the passage of the meridian of the 180th degree, which brought us from east into west longitude. On this account we added another day to the week, to make up for that which the circumnavigator who travels from west to east loses during his passage round the globe. Our time now, therefore, was twelve hours later than that of Greenwich, instead of twelve hours earlier, as it had been on the previous day.

We now dodged on gallantly for several weeks, without any occurrence worthy of notice, every twenty-four hours increasing our time of daylight, and augmenting our degrees of warmth in proportion to the southing we made.

At length, on an early day in January, being in latitude 23° 25′ and longitude 155° 35′, we took a course due south, with the good hope of making the islands the next morning. At midnight the island of Molokai, belonging to the Sandwich group, bore by the reckoning due

south of us, distance about ten miles, which, if we were correct, would leave the passage between that island and the island of Woahoo open to leeward; but as the night was dark, it was judged prudent to heave the vessel to, until daylight might show us our position with more certainty. This was a moment of our voyage of the greatest interest. Making the land after crossing any ocean, is ever a time of interest. But after our sufferings during the early part of this voyage, and owing to the uncertainty we were in concerning the condition of the chronometers (for this delicate instrument is often disturbed by weather not half so bad as that we had experienced), it was to us a moment of the highest possible interest.

I was upon deck with the captain and all the officers as the day broke upon the morning of the 29th, and our eyes were turned with intense curiosity in the direction in which we trusted we should see the island. But as it happened that a haze, which had prevailed during the night, thickened with the increase of the light, nothing was visible, even after the sun had risen. Our captain determined, however, considering that we were at least sure of our latitude, to approach within five miles of the island by the reckoning, or even to continue to run down till we should hear the sea breaking upon its rude northern shores. We ran, accordingly, within, as we

supposed, about that distance of its known rocky steeps, but the mist continued as dense as ever, and still we saw and heard nothing. Here we again hove to, to see if any indication of change would appear with the approach of noon. We had scarcely, however, done this, when a little augmentation of the wind, while it yet wanted three hours of mid-day, suddenly carried off the haze, and the so-anxiously-looked-for isle, forming a beautiful spectacle which seemed hardly real, broke upon our sight in the very direction in which our eyes were bent, attesting at once the excellence of our instruments and the skill of our navigators.*

As the day advanced, the breeze strengthened to a fresh gale, while we were steering directly for the passage between the islands of Molokai and Woahoo, which is about twenty miles in breadth; and, after entering this strait under double-reefed topsails, as we proceeded, we hugged the shores of the island of Woahoo.

Perhaps those only who have made similar voyages to that which we had just accomplished can fully appreciate the agreeable feelings with

* We had two chronometers on board. One of them, which was manufactured at New York, having already proved false, was made no account of. But that to which we had trusted was of London manufacture, and was marked "No. 790, Thomas Dean, Dumpsey Street, Commercial Road."

which travellers look upon hills and vales, and contemplate scenes such as this island now exhibited from our deck. The distant view of these two islands presented but little natural vegetation, and no appearance of cultivation. Rude hills were first chiefly the features of the scene. But as we approached within five or six miles of the island of Woahoo, fertile vales and deep ravines between projections in the mountainous districts, and narrow plains of great natural fertility bordering the sea-shore, successively appeared; and, as we sailed along the coast the whole country seemed converted into a land of enchantment. At intervals appeared groves of cocoa-nut trees and other species of the palm, under the shade of which were grouped the huts of the natives; and with our telescopes we could perceive parties of the naked islanders, sitting about upon the green beneath the trees, or sporting on the shore.

By noon we had doubled the south-east point of the cape called Koko, and half an hour afterwards we passed a bold promontory called Leahi by the natives and Cape Diamond by Europeans. Soon after this we opened the harbour and town of Honolulu, the present seat of the government of the islands. But as we could not enter this day, on account of the direction of the wind, we anchored in the offing, and I

left the storm-beaten Josephine, in company with the captain, taking advantage of the return of the boat that brought off the pilot; and, after an hour's pull, we once more felt the firm earth beneath our feet.

CHAPTER III.

NATURAL HISTORY OF THE ISLANDS, AND ORIGIN OF THEIR INHABITANTS.

Number and Name of the Sandwich Islands—Geographical Position—Geological Features—Minerals—Climate—Vegetable Productions—Animals—Origin of the Inhabitants—Races of Malay Descent—Their Means of reaching the Islands—Piratical Expeditions—Loss of Junks—Further Proofs of Malay Descent—Junks still picked up—Man taken off a Junk.

THE account I purpose giving of my visit to these islands, seems to require a short notice concerning their position, their natural features, their climate, and their productions, as well as a few remarks upon the condition of their inhabitants from a remote period, followed by the leading passages in their history since their intercourse with Europeans.

The islands best known among us under the name of the Sandwich Islands, and called Hawaii by their native inhabitants, comprise, after New Zealand and some islands that approach the Asiatic shores, the most important of the many

groups which lie scattered over the wide expanse of the Pacific Ocean, and are included in the general term Polynesia, by which modern geographers have distinguished this sixth division of the globe. They were first discovered by Capt. Cook in 1778, though some ingenious persons have imagined grounds for conjectures tending to show that they were at least seen, if not taken possession of, by earlier navigators. The group is situated between the latitudes of 18° 54′ and 22° 20′ north, and between the 155th and the 170th degree of west longitude. It consists of eight inhabited islands, and two or three rocky, barren, and desolate islets. The most remarkable of the islands, and those which we shall visit, are called Woahoo or Oahu, Owhyhee or Hawaii, and Mowhee or Maui. The next in importance is Kawai. The three remaining are called Molokai, Lanai Niihau, and Kahoolawe. Their whole superficial area is about 6000 square miles, 4000 of which are comprised in Owhyhee alone. They are entirely of volcanic and coralline formation, and are generally surrounded by coral reefs, lying at a greater or less depth beneath the water, and forming, where there happen to be coves or indents of the coast, several commodious and many lesser harbours.

Both the higher and the lower lands, attest equally the origin of the islands, and the violent

geological revolutions which they have approved. On Owhyhee, two enormous mountains rise to 14,000 feet above the level of the sea, and rest crowned with perpetual snow. Many craters of extinct volcanoes, and extensive plains covered with the rude *débris* of earlier or later eruptions, exist everywhere; and Kilauea, on the mountain of Mouna Kea, is the largest active volcano in the known world.

In a country thus formed, and, doubtless, at a date comparatively so recent, we cannot be surprised that no metals have been found, and no minerals save the varieties of the lava, and some limestone which has been lately discovered lying in a remarkable and raised bed at Kahuku, in the island of Woahoo. In this island there is also a salt-lake, a little elevated above the surface of the sea. Soils formed of such materials as those which thus compose the entire bed of the islands, could not be expected to be very fertile, save upon some of the lower or little elevated lands, and in the valleys long formed in situations exposed to the winter rains.

The climate generally of the islands is remarkable for its salubrity and its even temperature. Near the sea, the highest elevation of the thermometer is 86° Fahrenheit, and the lowest 62°. The greatest heat occurs during the month of July, and the least in January. Thus the extreme range during the year, does

not exceed 24°, but the variation is rarely more than 8°. The inhabitants may, however, by ascending to the higher lands, live in any temperature between that of these tropical latitudes and that of the frigid zone. But, notwithstanding the general healthiness of the climate, at the time that the trade-winds are irregular, which happens during the winter months, when the wind is commonly from the south, rains and storms occur, attended by diseases not differing much from those which prevail in the southern parts of Europe at the same season — such as headaches, rheumatism, and others, arising from imprudent exposure to the night air, in damp and chilly weather.

According to the reports of naturalists who have visited the islands, the spontaneous productions of their soil are much more varied than the evidently recent formation of the group would lead us to expect. It will suffice to mention, that those of the family of *Rubiaceæ*, *Contortæ*, and *Urticæ*, predominate. From the last of these, as well as from the *Broussonetia papyrifera*, or the paper mulberry, are made cordage and cloths. The acacia also abounds in the mountain districts, and is employed by the natives in the construction of their canoes. The sandal-wood was also once very abundant, and lately afforded an article of commerce with the Chinese, by whom it is chiefly used for

cabinet purposes. It is now, however, save some young, and, for the present, useless trees, quite destroyed.

The more familiar plants and useful productions for domestic purposes are, the banana-tree, the sugar-cane, the yam, the bread-fruit, and the taro-root (*Arum esculentum*), all of which are indigenous.

Such were these islands after they first raised their towering heads above the waters of the mighty ocean which surrounds them, and such the earliest productions of the vegetable world which sprung from the soil first formed.

Several important plants have been lately introduced, such as the coffee, cotton, rice, tobacco, the melon and water-melon, indigo, and even the vine, of which, however, though it flourishes in the mountain districts, little use is likely to be made, on account of the necessity of discouraging the growth of everything from which alcohol may be distilled. Several of our ordinary vegetables have also been introduced with success, as well as some of the fruits of the tropical and temperate latitudes which were not indigenous, such as pine-apples, oranges, grapes, peaches, figs, tamarinds, and guavas. The bread-corns will also flourish on the higher lands.

With respect to the animal kingdom, it seems that at the discovery of the islands

nothing was observed save hogs and dogs, the importation, without doubt, of the first inhabitants, and such of Nature's earlier productions as may be considered habitants rather of the sea than of the land: but all our domestic animals, including such as we use for food, for beasts of burden, and for companions of our sports, have been since introduced.

But the first thought which presents itself to our minds, when we cast our eyes upon these islands on the map of the great ocean, is, surprise to find isles so remote from the world, with whose history we are acquainted, peopled by our own species; it may be as well, therefore, to make a few remarks, under the guidance of such information as we possess, concerning the first inhabitants of the group, and upon the probable means of their transport from the land from which they seem to have proceeded.

Future historians of this little state, will not be spared the perplexities which have obstructed the first steps of all who have endeavoured to trace the course of events by which small societies became mighty nations.

We may pass very lightly over certain speculations, which cannot be wholly overlooked, tending to show that the natives of this group, if not those of the rest of the Polynesian isles, are descended from the lost tribes of the Jews. These conjectures are founded upon the obser-

vation of several customs among the islanders, which are the same or similar to those believed to have been peculiar to the Jewish people. The more remarkable of them are: the offering of their first-fruits to their deities; circumcision, which was also here a religious ceremony, and performed by the priests; the strict seclusion of the women after the birth of a child, and during other periods of natural infirmity, with the ceremonies of purification, under pain even of death; and the possession of cities or places of refuge, similar in design to those of that people.

The circumstances that chiefly strike us, when we compare one people with another, with a view to ascertain what "propinquity and property of blood" they possess, are their physical conformation generally, but more particularly the features of the face, and their colour; and, after this, their language, their religion, and their well-established customs. For such examination of those that are at distances too remote from us to admit of especial or frequent observation, we have usually, and certainly in our case, to rely upon the accounts of navigators, missionaries, travellers, and merchants. Now we find almost the universal testimony of all who have visited the Pacific islands, that the inhabitants of the whole of the groups, as well as of New Zealand, resemble one another in

several, or in all these particulars; and, moreover, that they all bear in their type and physical conformation a greater resemblance to the Malay race, than to any other of the ancient inhabitants of the globe. But all difficulties in the way of establishing the theory of their having sprung from that race will disappear when we consider certain traditions among the natives, in conjunction with known facts concerning the intercourse between the inhabitants of distinct groups, and some other circumstances which I myself, in common with others, learned in the capacity of traveller during these inquiries in the Pacific.

There are traditions among the Sandwich islanders regarding the land from which their ancestors came, and of an intercourse formerly carried on between different groups, and it is commonly believed by them, that they came from Otaheite. They believe also that their progenitors, at a very remote period, possessed canoes of much larger dimensions and greater capability of navigating the ocean than the frail craft since in use among them. If, indeed, such canoes or vessels of any kind did ever exist, this fact alone is sufficient to settle the question of the intercourse formerly carried on between the islands, as well as that of the origin of the inhabitants. Let us then see what external information we have to corro-

borate these traditions. We know, from history, that every country bordering on the sea has from the earliest ages abounded in maritime adventurers; and, if we are acquainted with many circumstances which indicate the restraints that were put upon foreign enterprise and lawful trading, we also know that no laws have ever been able to suppress the marauding propensities of a nautical people, or of the organization even of direct systems of piratical adventure. Now, although we should suppose that no very long voyages were ever performed by any of the "Sea Kings," or Northmen of the Pacific, we have evidence in abundance, of the vessels of the Chinese and the Japanese being picked up by European whalers, after having been blown off the coasts of China and Japan, some of them with whole families on board. In 1832, a junk, after being tempest-tossed for eleven months, was cast on the shore even of Woahoo, with four men of her crew still surviving, and some of these vessels have been known to reach even the coast of America. During the voyage, with which this volume commences, there were but few old sailors among the seamen and officers on board our ship; but these had been long sailing in whalers in the Pacific, and especially upon the coasts of China and Japan, and they related to me many instances known to them of junks being

blown off those coasts, and picked up after they were incapable of returning, and of their crews having been carried back to their own country. In one of these cases, one of our officers was himself a party to the rescue of a junk and her crew, long after her pilots had lost all hopes of reaching their own shore. Now it is clear, that it would be quite enough for any single one of these vessels to reach any island, provided there were but one man and one woman surviving, to people at least the whole group to which that island belonged, though it is extremely unlikely, that from a single vessel, probably cast on the shore, others should proceed to undertake the long voyage which the great distance between the groups would involve. Nevertheless, if we even reject altogether the idea of intercourse between the groups generally, we have the same probability left, of the peopling of all the groups, one by one, by the same accident; which would equally account for the common Malay origin of their inhabitants, and also for such variation as we discover in their natural traits, customs, and language, by the variation of the character of the different nations of Malay origin, from which they might have come.

The captain of the Josephine had himself picked up a canoe from one of the islands within the tropics, with a man surviving, whom he

took with him to a port of the Atlantic States and, after a lapse of two years, carried back and landed upon one of the Bonin or Arzobespo islands, to which the man belonged, in about the lat. 27° north, and 145° east longitude.

Captain Hedges' account of this circumstance was curious. The man was as nearly in the natural state, if it be such, of our species, as can well be imagined. He had never seen any white man before; and, when he was taken on board, he exhibited almost as much terror of those who had saved his life, as satisfaction at his escape. Kind treatment, indeed, very soon reconciled him to his new associates, and before the ship reached her port, which, however, was not for many months, he had become a very good sailor. He had acquired, also, as much of the English language as was absolutely necessary in his position, with tolerable facility; but the chief use he made of it was to press his return to his native island. Finally, the captain, upon another voyage, was able to approach the island to which the man belonged, and to land him in a boat. The appearance of the whaler here, caused as much curiosity, mingled with alarm, as had attended the first advent of Cook and other early navigators in many of the islands of these seas; but when the natives saw their countryman jump on shore and run to greet his family, who were

among others upon the beach, they approached the boat, and overwhelmed all the white men with kind greetings; and they afterwards supplied them with hogs and bread-fruit, for which they would receive nothing but a little tobacco in return.

CHAPTER IV.

INSTITUTIONS, ARTS, AND CUSTOMS, OF THE ISLANDERS.

Early Records—Classes of the People—Despotic Rulers—Hereditary Rank—Orders of Nobility—Customs—Laws—Punishment for Offences—Hospitality—Customs in War—Pitched Battles—Naval Actions—Religious Institutions—Character of their Gods—Idolatry—Temples—Priestly Order—Ordinances—Taboo—Customs of Burial—Future State—The Arts—Agriculture—Mechanical Arts—Building—Astronomical Knowledge—Fine Arts—Historical Poems—Oratory—Language—Examples of Language—Remarkable Customs—Prevailing Vices—Social Life—Savage Character—Cannibals—Degraded Condition—Low Condition of the Women.

We may now take a short review of the ancient institutions of the islanders, both civil and religious, and of the state of the arts, with the character of some of the remarkable customs which prevailed among them. For our knowledge on these subjects we are chiefly indebted to the missionaries, who, from the nature of their occupation, and their necessary acquaintance with the native tongue, must be

considered to be the best informed on all these matters.

The authority upon which the greater part of the annals among the people rests, consists of poems and songs, which, as in the early ages of most nations, record the events that led to, or were coeval with, the foundation of society among them. Those which have gained the most credit with the missionaries, appear to register the vicissitudes of no less than seventy-seven generations since the people first lived in a state of society, subject to kings, or chiefs firmly enough seated to exercise such degrees of rigour as is usually found the sole means of maintaining order in the earlier stages of any nation's history. They abound, however, in accounts of the deeds of warriors and extravagant tales, as well as in the records of such vices and crimes as stain the earlier pages of the history of every people.

From a remote period, the islands seem to have been independent of one another. Their internal governments were perfect despotisms, under no other check than such as arose from the respect in which the people held certain customs and laws connected with the name of any revered king. These were chiefly such as regarded the titles by which lands were held, the security of property and person under certain circumstances, and the regulations of some

taxes levied for the maintenance of the chiefs, and for religious uses.

The people were in effect divided into two orders; the nobles, who passed their lives in idleness, and the slaves or serfs, who were bound to the soil, and belonged to its owner.

The will of the reigning king, when he was able to enforce it, was their sole law. If his disposition was good, the people were happy in his protection against the oppressions of the chiefs; but if it were otherwise, the whole state of society became disorganized, and the worst of crimes prevailed throughout the land.

The king sometimes delegated his authority to chiefs who ruled islands or districts; but in general the government was carried on by means of numerous agents, through whom the king's will became known. His particular household consisted of a number of idlers, kept for ceremony and pomp, among whom were the executors of the law.

Rank was hereditary, descending almost always by common consent from the woman, on account of the impossibility, in such a state of society as existed, for the male descent of any one to be known.

There were three orders among the nobility. The first comprised the king, and all his family and relations whatsoever; the second, the chiefs of districts, and the chiefs of villages; and the

third, those who held estates upon rents paid to the king, and those to whom these might happen to be let. Though lands were by right held from the king, many possessed them by titles alone of conquest, which passed from generation to generation, without any question of the validity of the claim. The respect paid by the lower ranks to the chiefs was extremely servile, and any neglect thereof was punished with death. But, inconsistent as it may appear, there seems to have been general assemblies of all classes of the people, upon which occasions speeches were made with perfect freedom, and great powers of eloquence, judging from the reported effects, were produced.

Some customs, rather than laws, existed, which served for a criminal code. When offences were committed, and the parties were equal, retaliation was sanctioned; but in case of the injured party being too weak to resort to this method of punishing the offender, an appeal was made to the king, or to some chief of a district. These, influenced by caprice or policy, punished or pardoned the offender, or left the matter to the priests, who, secure in the superstitious awe with which they were regarded, subjected the defendants to ordeals sufficiently adroitly managed to condemn them or not as they pleased. Murders were rarely punished, on account of the party chiefly injured

among the living having seldom any motive for appeal. Theft was often punished with death; but every license was permitted to the nobles, in their transactions with the inferior classes. Hospitality, so common among the most primitive people, was also a virtue among these islanders.

Frequent wars appear to have taken place among the inhabitants of the different islands of the group at every period of their history, excited sometimes by the ambition of neighbouring chiefs or rival kings, but often arising out of private injuries committed by the tenants of one chief upon those of another. The regulations and laws of war were sufficiently established to reduce their savage strife to something like a system. As soon as war was declared, heralds were sent forth to summon all the people to assemble for the common defence; and the king, with his chiefs and the priests, met to form their plans of attack and defence, the king or highest chief of the party taking the command. Their first step was to dispatch all those who were not capable of bearing arms to strongholds prepared for them on elevated positions, or in the recesses of the forests, or to such places of refuge as have been above-mentioned. Then the armies assembled under their leaders, every chief with his followers forming a separate division. The people were

trained to combat, by exercises in the use of such arms as they possessed, and in the movements that such skill as the chiefs had attained enabled them to plan. Their principal weapons were javelins, spears, and slings by which they could lance stones with great force and exactness. They do not appear to have used much strategy, whether owing to the nature of the ground upon which their battles were generally fought being open, or to any other cause; nor do their combats seem to have been so bloody as the uncontrolled ferocity of their natures would have led us to expect. The greatest skill was displayed in the drawing up of the armies and arranging the order of a pitched battle. A solid body of spearsmen occupied the centre, while the wings were composed chiefly of slingers, and those who bore the missiles of closer combat. The king, or commander-in-chief, placed himself at the head of the centre division; and near his person appeared some of the priests bearing the idols, and by loud shouts and yells stimulating the courage of their own party, and striking terror into the hearts of their enemies. Naval actions were also sometimes fought, in which one or two hundred canoes were engaged. Their wars, however, were not commonly of long duration, although generally complete in their results, by ending in the entire subjection of the vanquished, whose fighting

men retired to strongholds, and left the conqueror to appropriate their country and enslave its entire population. Some of the prisoners were usually massacred; while others were reserved and sacrificed at the altars of the idols which had accompanied the victors.

The ancient religion of the islanders continued to prevail long after many Europeans had been some time among them. No material change indeed took place, until after the Christian missionaries had been able to establish themselves, and had had time to prepare the way for the general conversion of the people, by acquiring an influence over their chiefs and principal rulers. The religion of a people in the condition of these islanders at the epoch of the discovery of the group, is a subject, however, that we can rarely contemplate, without a feeling of depression almost strong enough to deprive us of the calmness with which the acts of men in every stage of society should be reviewed, or a feeling of degradation almost sufficient to bereave us of that sense of the dignity of our nature, which is so closely connected with our hopes of a future life.

Nothing that ever bore the name of religion could more excite our horror and wonder, than that which existed among these islanders, were we not acquainted with the practices which prevailed among even the most refined nations of

antiquity, and during the lifetime of such men as will never cease to be objects of the admiration of mankind. It consisted of the belief in a number of gods, who were to be feared, conciliated by sacrifices and worshipped, in a manner that was well suited indeed to the characters given to these precious objects of adoration; and the chiefs and priests, generally understanding each other, employed the same means resorted to for the same ends among all barbarians—pretended communications with invisible powers, accompanied by such other practices as their experience revealed to them were the best adapted to excite the terrors of the people.

The origin assigned to these gods, though somewhat obscure, seems generally to have been similar to that of all other nations that have not arrived at any idea of the unity, and of the spiritual nature alone, of the Deity. Some were heroes, who had been the terror of the nation; others were creatures such as we cannot accuse Nature of having ever formed. Some were male, and some female; and they generally presided over particular places, or directed especial operations in the natural or moral world. Some of them rejoiced in the turmoil and fire of the craters of volcanic mountains, which broke into furious eruption or ceased to burn at their will; while others moped in secret caves and deep ravines,

or in thick forests, into which they often drew men by their artifices, and destroyed them. Many of them were represented by wooden idols. There were also particular household gods, which owed their existence or adoption to the terrors of families on uncommon occasions. These passed from generation to generation, like other goods and possessions.

I shall only name two of these worthies of the island mythology, which our course of observations in a future page may seem to give us some little interest in—their famous male deity, called Lono, who will be found identified with the discoverer of the group; and the female deity, Pelee, who dwelt in the midst of the terrible fires of the great volcano, which we shall visit.

There were temples, or *heiaus*, erected in different parts of the islands, for public worship, and for offering sacrifices, which were sometimes of men, sometimes of the only quadrupeds they possessed, which were dogs and swine, and sometimes of the first-fruits of the productions of the soil.

The priestly order comprised quite a distinct class, whose offices and functions were hereditary, and whose revenues, besides possessions in land, proceeded from exactions levied upon the people.

The most successful deception practised by

the chiefs and priests was, a kind of ordinance, called taboo, which sometimes put a spell upon, or prohibition to touch or make use of, certain objects, which became sacred to the priestly order, and at other times served to excite the terrors by which they perpetuated their power. By this means, everything possessed by that order was conserved to their use, and everything which they coveted was easily obtained. But other and more general instances of this ordinance were sometimes carried into effect. The whole of the population, when it was the pleasure of their rulers, were put under the spell, which suspended every kind of labour. The obligation to this effect was announced by heralds, who were sent throughout the land, commanding men to frequent the temples, and pass the greater part of their time in prayer and sacrifices to the idols within them. Sometimes there was a seemingly rational object for this sort of taboo, supposed to be particularly acceptable to the gods, such as victory over their enemies, or the recovery of the king from any sickness with which he happened to have been afflicted. But more commonly the dread ordinance was only a means of exciting terror, and practising acts of tyranny and barbarity. The punishment inflicted upon all who, either by accident or design, broke these taboos by committing any forbidden act, was always

death, except in cases where, as it sometimes happened, the offenders were too powerful to be quietly despatched. Some of the victims were buried alive, and others were put to death by lingering tortures of a day or more's duration.

The bodies of the people generally, were placed in caverns, or holes perforated in the side of cliffs overhanging the sea, after the manner we observe to have been the practice of the ancient Egyptians, in their cliffs bordering the Nile, or in the vicinity of their larger towns.

Among the multitude of religions, as we are accustomed to call equally the most refined systems of faith and morals, and the most barbarous superstitions, even down to some so horrible that they seem as if Satan had more to do with their invention than men, there appears always one bright spark—"give the devil his due"—which still feebly illumines the general darkness —some star that the malign spirit could no more extinguish than he could put out the fire of that shining orb that met his eye, when, after his passage through the "nethermost abyss," he first entered the precincts of light, bound on his bad errand to destroy,

> "If ancient and prophetic fame in heaven
> Err'd not,"

a new order of beings—our poor race—about that time to be created. In the faith of these islanders, this star was dim indeed; but it classed

them in the order of beings to which it was designed they should belong;—they believed in a future world prepared for the just and the unjust, and, in common with civilised men, in the happiness of the good and the punishment of the wicked.

The most important of all the arts—that upon which the accumulation of wealth and the increase of the amount of leisure, the means which lead to civilisation and refinement, chiefly depend—agriculture, was, before the arrival of Europeans, in a very primitive state among the islanders, depending only upon practice and the aid of the rudest implements. Among other useful arts of which they had attained some knowledge, may be mentioned the medical. Men, I believe, have never been found, even in their most savage condition, without some acquaintance with the healing, as well as the poisonous properties of many species of the vegetable kingdom. Unhappily, however, in the simplest stages of society, whatever knowledge is attained in this art is engrossed by the priests, who report that they received it from the gods of their dread hierarchy, and oftener employ it to excite superstitious terrors, and acquire or conserve their power and influence, than for sanative purposes. Here, these deceivers rioted in the fulness of their ill-acquired power over the duped multitude, secure from the opposition even of

the best of kings or chiefs, by the universal dread entertained of their power over the lives of all men. · Those who practised the art, appear to have been a distinct order of priests, or hereditary seers; and, like the common herd of sorcerers everywhere, they administered their medicines accompanied with a multitude of occult ceremonies, and probably as often with evil as with good effect.

The progress of the islanders in the purely mechanical arts was as great as we could expect where no metals were employed. The instruments with which they worked were chiefly of stone and shell. With these they were able to furnish themselves with their weapons of war, their instruments for fishing, many articles of household necessity or luxury, and such as they employed in their various sports, their canoes, some of which were sixty feet in length, their mats made from rushes, and a sort of cloth woven from a species of flax indigenous in the lower lands, their instruments of music, and vessels for drawing water, or for containing any articles, dry or liquid. Their ordinary houses, consisting of a mere frame of wood, entirely thatched with dried grass, and containing only a bench and some mats, required but little skill to construct or furnish. They were usually built by their intended occupants, and rebuilt at the end of six or seven years, beyond which they

rarely lasted. Those of the chiefs, however, were more carefully constructed, and required the united skill of their best workmen in the arts in which they severally excelled.

The missionaries have collected some tolerably exact accounts of the progress even of astronomical knowledge in the islands previous to the arrival of the Europeans. There seems something incongruous in applying such terms to any acquirements of savages such as we have seen these islanders. They appear, however, to have distinguished one or two of the planets from the fixed stars, and to have had names for several of both of these. They divided their year into two seasons, regulated by the declination of the sun, rather than by the increase and decline of vegetation, not always regular. They made the year to consist of twelve months of thirty days each, rather than, as we should have supposed, of the period of the moon. This seems to indicate, either that their knowledge was derived from other sources than observation, or that their observations were made from a very remote period.

In such of the fine arts as usually accompany, if they do not precede, all the most useful save such as are founded upon the simplest of the mechanical powers, the islanders were considerably advanced; and they were no exception, among varied inhabitants of the earth in

the same stage of society, in their love of metrical compositions, oratory, and music. Their earliest essays were only one of the varieties of the universal hymn raised by all creatures, in the dawn of their existence, to the common Lord of all. After these came other compositions, which recorded all the remarkable transactions of their history. The profession of the bards, who were the authors of these, being hereditary, and their lives kept sacred to this purpose, their productions were learned by heart and recited, and thus handed down from one generation to another, from the earliest age; so that scarcely anything that might have been composed could have been too voluminous for preservation. Two circumstances, however, became the cause of the loss of the greater portion of their annals: frequent and destructive wars, with the consequent disorganisation of society; and, the partial cessation of the profession of the bards, before sufficient curiosity had been felt, or enough of the language acquired by Europeans, to induce them to gather carefully the records that remained. There was also a class of strolling musicians, who accompanied their rude music, consisting chiefly of a kind of drum or tambourine, with songs of an inferior order of composition, but much more of which has survived.

The orators were also hereditary. These were chiefly employed by the kings and high

chiefs as ambassadors in times of peace, and to excite the passions of the people during war. Their language appears to have had few terms to express abstract ideas, but to have been almost limited to such as merely gave utterance to some passion or sentiment which is common to our nature. By the use of figurative language, however, they are known to have had the power of moving the passions of the people to a degree hardly to be conceived by those who have witnessed nothing similar. Their proper poems recited, as well as their odes and songs, derived great advantages from the abundance of the vowel sounds in the language, and the consequent smoothness and harmony of its verse and cadence.

No attempts seem to have been made to represent language by signs of any kind. A few simple lines and figures appear upon some of the rocks, together with some very imperfect drawings of animals, but they are almost too rude to be worthy of notice. From the report of the natives, they seem to have had no more meaning in them than some inscribed by tourists in many other countries, to commemorate their visits to the places where they leave them. Their language has now, however, been resolved into its first principles by the missionaries, and figured by the same letters we use. From the beginning it was perceived that it was composed

of short syllables, terminating invariably in vowel sounds. But after the analysis had been commenced, it was discovered that, while all our vowels were necessary to reduce it to writing, its variations of sound were so limited as to require but the addition of seven consonants, making in all only twelve letters. The following few words and explanations will give some idea of its character. They are taken from the vocabulary printed by the missionaries for the use of the islanders in acquiring the English tongue. The phrases employed to express our most ordinary monosyllabic nouns and verbs will show at once the better properties of the language and its ill-adaptation to the purposes of civilised life.

sun—e kau i ka la
moon—ka mahina
month—he hapa humikumamalua o ka makahiki
year—e makahiki
day—he la hokoa
night—ka wa poeleele
island—he dina i huo punim e ke kai
tree—he laau nui
wind—he makani
cloud—he do
to be—he haina hooid e like
to have—ua loau ia nona
to give—he haawa aku
to take—he lalau lima
to sow—he puau wahine
to mow—e oki me ka paki oki mauu mahoo
to reap—e okioki i ka ai me ka pahi kakiwi.

There were many remarkable customs among the people, of which I shall chiefly mention such as most tend to mark their natural dispositions, or serve to characterise the age in human progress which they had attained, with some of those which still relieve the weary hours of their monotonous lives. Among the more characteristic were their performances in the water. Here they wrestled, swam in a number of different ways, sometimes with their hands alone, and sometimes with only their feet, often after jumping into the foaming flood beneath precipitous cliffs. But there was a sport among them, of which the bare mention by a name, not improperly given it by foreigners, might cause any continental European, with the imperfect acquaintance almost all possess of our own manners, to exclaim, Behold a second Britain! This is called *mokomoko* by the natives; and by the foreigners, boxing. The antagonists fought, indeed, much in the same manner as our boxers. They were the serfs of different, and perhaps rival, chiefs; and their combats were regulated by laws or usages similar to those that prevail among us. Nevertheless, as there were usually several on either side, when stimulated by the applause of the spectators, one or two were frequently killed.

A custom also prevailed, bearing singular relation to the wake of our Hibernian fellow-

countrymen. When any one of a family died, the relations assembled, both within and without the hut of the deceased, and filled the air with their lamentations. But upon the decease of a chief, the inhabitants of the villages gathered in the valleys and along the shores, where they lighted funeral fires, around which they gave way to the wildest grief; and their loud cries passed from village to village, and from island to island, in a short time, throughout the whole group.

Some of the practices that took place on these occasions, if not exaggerated in the accounts given of them, almost exceeded anything that an European might imagine. All law, all order, all restraints upon every passion of our nature, are said to have been entirely thrown off. Drunkenness, plunder, broils ending in the death of many, and general prostitution, prevailed throughout the land for several successive days, terminating only in the triumph of human shame over the spirit of licentiousness, after the unrestrained passions of men were exhausted, and natural weariness succeeded.

Among their peaceful amusements was dancing by the women, which was sometimes, however, in honour of triumphs over their enemies, and sometimes of a religious character, and was accompanied by the beat of drums and the songs of the musicians. At other times the

women danced only for the amusement of the chiefs; and often their performances consisted of mere distortions of the body and other acts, too far removed from decency to admit of description. One of their games consisted of sliding on a board, down smooth declivities, often terminating at the brink of a cliff, from which they fell into the sea. The rest were mere games, resorted to for the purpose of gambling, to which the people were much addicted, even to the sacrifice of the last article they possessed. One of these resembled our drafts, and another bowling.

All their relations of social life, or such as chiefly distinguish the civilized man from the savage, were of the most degrading character. There existed a union, something like marriage, among them; but this seems to have been confined almost wholly to the higher class chiefs. Men usually allied themselves with only one woman at the same time, but changed her for another, just as inclination happened to prompt them. But those who had the means, kept as many as they thought proper. The tie, whatever name we may give it, was at all times extremely loose; and in general every one's wishes were gratified, without any restraint proceeding from the fear of the consequences of jealousy. Guests, especially, though mere passers-by, were permitted to indulge their inclinations, without

regard to any ties whatever that happened to exist between the men and women of the houses into which they entered. It would have been considered a breach of hospitality to have done otherwise. But the worst feature of this phase of their morals was the frequent incestuous character of their intercourse, which was carried to a degree, indeed, which almost exceeds belief. But this absence of restraint upon their desires ceases to surprise us when we remember we are speaking of men who "made their generation messes to gorge their appetites." Captain King, indeed, in his journal, when giving an account of the death of Cook, seems to think differently; but he grounded his opinion upon a mere answer to a question asked of the natives who brought off a portion of the mangled body of his captain. They might have thought he inquired whether they themselves had eaten the rest; and as this was the greatest act of contempt they could put on their enemies, it would have been folly to confess it, when they had come on board the ship upon a peaceful errand.* That the islanders were so low in the scale of human creatures is, however, well known from such of their own oral records as we have above mentioned. Some among them, indeed, even recol-

* Many accounts of this matter have been given, but it is believed that the heart alone of Cook, was eaten by some children, who mistook it for that of a hog.

lect the day when the practice prevailed. As far as Europeans have been able to discover, it appears that the horrible custom was very general many ages ago, when all parties in the islands used to roast and devour the flesh of their enemies taken in war with the most frantic zest; but that, about the time of the discovery, whether from any cause of mere temporary effect, or from any real progress in their manners, it had much diminished. Perhaps their progress in the art of agriculture, whether by accident or from practice, was the cause of this improvement; for we must, for the honour of our species, believe, that hunger has always some share in stimulating men to acts that degrade their nature below that of the brutes that roam the most sterile deserts.

The parental and filial attachments, upon which civilization so much depends, scarcely existed among the islanders. The aged were put to death by their children, or left to perish in exposed places. Infanticide was practised to so great an extent, that more than one-half of the children are supposed to have perished by the hands of their parents, who by the law had unlimited power over their offspring.

The state of degradation in which the people lived, without doubt in a great measure proceeded from their drunken habits, the art of producing an intoxicating spirit, which they

called *awa*, being well known to them. The pernicious liquor was obtained by a process worthy its use and effects. Men sat round a caldron, masticating the leaves of a plant of the same name, which in that state was thrown into a common receiver, where this filth was left to ferment until the spirit was produced.

Among the most pernicious of their laws were certain prohibitions and restrictions upon the women, which so degraded them, as totally to destroy that influence with the opposite sex which Nature seems to have intended to be one of the means of humanising and refining our species. Perhaps a just moral, as well as political history of the progress of mankind, would date the commencement of the best eras of civilisation in the several countries, both ancient and modern, that have attained any degree of advancement, from the period of the raising of the women to an equality with the other sex. Not the first step in this direction was taken by these islanders, until some time after the Europeans had settled among them. At the time concerning which we are now chiefly treating, the women remained in the lowest state of degradation. They lived in apartments separated from the men, or in distinct houses, not being allowed to enter those of their husbands or brothers for other purposes than to perform the duties or obligations

of slaves. They never ate or drank in company with the men; and they were forbidden, under the heaviest penalties, to partake of the most choice articles of food which the islands supplied; among which were, pork, shark, tortoises, and several of the best fruits, especially cocoa-nuts and bananas.

Such appears to have been the civil and religious condition of these islanders, and the state of the arts among them, before the arrival of the Europeans; such the advance they had made, from what is commonly deemed the natural condition of our species, towards those degrees of refinement with which we are better acquainted. The transactions and changes which took place between that epoch and the present time, we shall now attempt, in as brief a manner as possible, to relate.

CHAPTER V.

SKETCH OF THE PROPER HISTORY OF THE ISLANDS.

Discovery—The King of Owhyhee—Kamehameha—Visit of the first Merchant Ships—La Pérouse—Kamehameha invades Mawhee—Character of this King—Compared to Fingal—Invasion of Kamehameha's Territories—Effects of an Eruption of a Volcano—Cruelties of a Merchant Captain—Retaliation—Sailor Davis—Sailor Young—Favourites of the King—Honours conferred on the Sailors—Vancouver's Arrival—His Intercourse with the Natives—Massacre of White Men—Causes—False Impressions—Vancouver's second Visit—Landing first Cattle—Instance of Favour to the Women—Acts of Vancouver—Young and Davis—Vancouver's Advice—New War of Kamehameha—Kamehameha's Private Life—Death—King Liholiho—First Missionaries arrive—Their Reception—High Priest's Conversion—King embarks for England—King and Queen die in London—Return of his Companions—Captain Lord Byron—Arrival of Romish Priests—Consequences—Effects of the Mass—New Reign—Political Affairs.

On the 27th January, 1778, Captain Cook, perhaps aided by some vague information received from the Otaheitians, whom we have supposed to have had intercourse ages before with the inhabitants of this group, first descried the

island of Kawai, and came to an anchor in the bay of Waimea, on its southern coast. The character of the first intercourse between Europeans and the rude natives of the Pacific islands is too familiar to every one to need any remarks in this place.

Kalamhopuu reigned in Owhyhee at the time of the discovery of the group. He died in the spring of 1782, after leaving the eastern portion of his dominions to his son Kiwalao, who was already established in the government of those districts, and the western to his nephew Kamehameha, who became subsequently the most famous warrior and king whose deeds are recorded in the native annals. Dissensions, however, soon arose, and Kiwalao, excited by his chiefs, entered the dominions of Kamehameha, and, being met by his rival, an action took place, which is said to have lasted, with short intervals of repose, for eight days. It terminated, however, with the death of Kiwalao, by which Kamehameha became master of the whole island.

The first event in the history of the intercourse of the Europeans and the inhabitants of the group, after the death of Cook, which occurred in the autumn of 1786, was the arrival of two English merchant ships, the King George and the Queen Charlotte, commanded by Captains Portlock and Dixon. On their

appearance off Karakakooa bay, they were met by numerous canoes, which came off to exchange such articles as the natives had found most valued by their former white visitors, for iron, axes, and other wares, of which they had already learned the use. In the evening the natives left the vessel, and the following morning the captains, pleased with their good prospects, came to anchor, though very cautiously, in this notorious bay. But here they were boarded by such a turbulent set of fellows, without any chief to keep them in order, that they soon thought it prudent to weigh again and leave the place. After persevering, however, in carrying on a running traffic for several days, they steered for Woahoo, and subsequently for Kawai, upon the coasts of which islands they anchored, and continued to trade with the natives.

Among the memorable incidents of this period in the history of the islands, was the visit of the unfortunate La Pérouse, who anchored his two frigates in the strait between Mawhee and Molokai, on the 28th May, 1786. He remained but two days, and had consequently but little intercourse with the inhabitants, of whose dispositions he carried away very favourable impressions.

During the war for the sovereignty of Owhyhee, Kahekili, who had become king of

Mawhee, and of all the rest of the considerable islands of the group west of Owhyhee except Kawai, had sent aid to Kiwalao, which, at the close of the contest, induced Kamehameha to invade Mawhee while Kahekili was at Woahoo. The description given by the natives, of the engagement which took place between the subjects of Kahekili, commanded by his son, and the Owhyhians, commanded by Kamehameha, reminds us of the battles sung by the blind bard of our own island, in something like a parallel age in the two people's history; and such was the reputation of the Owhyhian hero at this time, that even that of Fingal could hardly have been greater. If the Owhyhian had not the unparalleled virtues of the peaceful kind, as well as of the warlike, which together give such affecting interest to the actions of the Caledonian, he was as much superior to any of his predecessors in clemency and moderation after victory, as in his acts of heroism in the field. He was of uncommon stature and strength, and was not less remarkable for the power of his voice; but his heroism was always under the government of his better judgment. Standing far off during the battle, like the Caledonian warrior, he directed and watched the turn of events, until he observed any portion of his army yield ground, upon which he rushed with the swiftness of an eagle to their aid. By his

voice alone he struck his enemies with terror, while he animated his warriors, whom he led to victory. This contest terminated in the total defeat of the Mawhians, and the flight of the son of the king of the island to Woahoo.

During Kamehameha's absence on this expedition, Keoua, one of the chiefs of the king's late rival in Owhyhee, who had taken refuge in the mountains after the defeat of Kiwalao, entered his territory, left under the command of Kaiani; but an eruption of the volcano of Kilauea happening to occur while he was on his march in the vicinity of the mountain, part of his warriors were destroyed by the gaseous and sulphureous vapours proceeding from the great crater, while a part, terrified by their superstitious as well as their natural fears, fled before the supposed vengeance of Pelee, the goddess of the volcano, who they believed had risen to aid their enemies and destroy them, and the rest were defeated by Kamehameha, after his return from Mawhee. After this, Keoua fled again to his former retreat in the mountains, where he remained until, weary of solitude, he surrendered himself to the conqueror, by whom he was put to death and sacrificed with several of his friends.

We must now recur to an event which happened the year before the departure of Kamehameha for the prosecution of the war in the

leeward islands. The American vessel, Eleanor, Captain Metcalf, arrived at Owhyhee, and after engaging in trade for some time, left this island and anchored off Honuaula, in the island of Mawhee. Two of the chiefs in that island, hearing of her arrival, laid a plan by which they stole one of her boats which had been moored under her stern, and in which a seaman that had been left to watch was sleeping. As soon as they attained the shore they murdered the seaman, and burned the boat merely for the nails it contained, which served them for fish-hooks. A reward was offered by the captain of the Eleanor for the remains of his boat and the body of the seaman; but as the island was at the time under strict taboo, which none dared violate, no one for the present appeared. At the term of the taboo, however, numbers of canoes came alongside, some bearing a part of the body of the seaman and the remains of the boat, for which they claimed the reward, some loaded with provisions, and others merely to gratify their curiosity, which enabled the American to revenge himself, after his own manner, for the murder of his countryman. Regulations were enforced, by which all the canoes were gathered on one side of the vessel without allowing a man to come on board. Then, at a convenient moment, the guns, loaded with grape-shot, bullets, and nails, were run out,

and suddenly fired upon the innocent and the guilty, accompanied by a volley of musket balls from the deck, by which about a hundred natives were killed, and a proportionate number wounded.

About the same time, or a little after this, a small schooner that had been the consort of the Eleanor, and was commanded by the son of Metcalf, arrived at Kawaihae, in the same island. No communication having taken place between the father and son, the latter, who was a mere youth, and full of confidence in the loyalty of the natives, admitted many of them on board, who came with a quantity of supplies for his vessel. The natives, however, were a party of serfs, with their chief, Kameeimoku, who came on board in a false character, to seek an opportunity of revenging upon the white men the late and other offences; and, as soon as his party was in sufficient strength, he attacked the schooner's crew, and murdered them all, save one seaman, named Isaac Davis, who was, however, carried on shore wounded.

About the same time, or a little before this, the Eleanor arrived at Karakakooa bay, in Owhyhee, where, notwithstanding the news of the massacre committed by her captain at Mawhee having reached the island, she was suffered to trade unmolested, on account of the war existing between the two islands. After a

short stay, she got under weigh to leave the bay, while one of her seamen, of the name of John Young, was still on shore. But it happened at this very time, that news arrived at this bay, of the capture of the schooner and the murder of the crew, and Kamehameha, who was here, would not allow Young to be taken off, lest Metcalf should have heard of the circumstance, and should, in revenge, murder the crew of the canoe that carried him. In the meantime, the captain, unwilling to trust a boat on shore, sailed, leaving Young behind him, without having heard of the murder of his son and the crew of the schooner.

With the captivity of these two seamen, Young and Davis, commences a new era in the relations between the natives and white men. Thus, thrown accidentally among the islanders, without hope of escape, they entered into the service of the king, over whom they soon began to exercise considerable influence. Kamehameha, indeed, was so pleased with his white friends, that, in order to render them contented and secure their future services, he presented them with estates, and raised them to the rank of high chiefs.

Notwithstanding the honours, however, that were conferred upon these sailors, and the security they seemed to enjoy, they had shortly reason to find that they were still among

savages. Any general ill-will borne them they had no reason to suspect. From the king to his meanest subject, every one seemed so much attached to their new associates of another race, that no open outrage could have been committed against them without subjecting the assailants to the certainty of being instantly put to death.

The most remarkable events which followed the settlement of these seamen comprise the several visits of Vancouver. This enterprising navigator first anchored with the ships Discovery and Chatham in Karakakooa bay, on the 3d of March, 1792. His stay here, as well as in the group on this occasion, was short, and his opportunities for observation were few; but he appears to have been much struck with the apparent depopulation throughout the group since a former visit he had made with Cook, which was chiefly caused by the wars that had almost ever since raged between the kings of the different islands. Several of the natives boarded the ships; but upon finding that the object of their commander was to survey the coasts, and not to trade, and that they could not obtain any weapons of war, which were withheld from them by Vancouver with scrupulous exactness, they left the ship in the bad humour that never fails to display itself with men in this stage of society at the smallest disappointment of their hopes. After touching at Waikiki bay

in Mawhee, and at Waimea in Woahoo, the ships sailed for the coast of America.

Vancouver, after visiting the coasts of America, returned to the islands in the spring of 1793, bringing with him the germ of future abundance in a new source of wealth to the natives, consisting of some horned cattle and sheep which he had procured in California. After visiting Kawaihae in Owhyhee, he continued his course southward along the western coast of the island, during which he was boarded by Kamehameha, accompanied by the sailor Young, now the chief of the king's councillors.

The island happened at the time to be under taboo, and all transactions were unlawful, except for procuring fire-arms, the possession of which was already so coveted that the firmest rooted of the superstitions of the islanders gave way before the desire to procure the weapons of war of Europeans. Vancouver, however, by the influence he had gained over the chiefs, obtained permission to break the taboo to do them better service, and several of the cattle and sheep were landed and presented to Kamehameha.

At the same time, in order that the islanders might receive all the advantages he intended, he procured, before finally leaving the islands, a promise from the king, confirmed by a taboo upon the new stock, that not one should be killed during the space of ten years, and this

promise was faithfully kept. The increase of the animals was, however, so rapid, that before the expiration of the time the horned cattle became sufficiently troublesome in the neighbourhood of the villages, by breaking down fences and devouring the grass huts, as well as the taro crops of the people, to oblige the king to order them to be driven to the mountains, where their race still roam wild in great numbers, and form a valuable national property, as we shall more particularly see when we visit this island.

The British captain, indeed, did something more than this. He obtained a promise from the king, at which the delicate sex especially, among every people, could not fail to approve a certain degree of satisfaction. It has been mentioned that, under the ancient system, the most choice of both the animal and vegetable food of the islands was strictly taboo to the women. But the captain exacted some relaxation of this unjust restraint, in a promise that they should be permitted to eat of the flesh of the animals he brought, after the term of the taboo; though the favour, it must be allowed, was a little qualified by the reserve, that they should partake only of such parts as were in other cases given to the dogs.

The enlightened king with whom Vancouver held his intercourse, warned by the fatal consequences that had so often attended the transac-

tions between the natives and the Europeans, upon his finding it to be the wish of the Europeans to establish an observatory on shore, laid down himself a plan for the regulation of the crews of the ships and his people, which was considered judicious by the British captain, and was attended with complete success.

Vancouver made, while in the island, the most strenuous efforts to put an end to the war which was still raging between Owhyhee and the leeward islands; but his efforts were attended with little success, on account of its being the policy of Kamehameha to continue the war until he had subjected all the islands of the group to his rule.

Vancouver sailed after a fortnight's stay; but again visited the island, and for the last time, in January 1794. He arrived off Hilo, on the east coast of Owhyhee, and Kamehameha happening to be at the time residing there, immediately came off to visit him. The British captain received the king with great marks of esteem, and invited him to accompany the vessel on her voyage round to Karakakooa bay. He appears to have been now so favourably impressed with the character of the king, and especially with his judgment in retaining the white men, Young and Davis, of whose good sense and humanity he had formed the highest opinion, that he did all in his power to confirm him in

his possessions and authority. For this purpose he departed from his former cautious policy, and supplied him with guns and ammunition, and instructed him in the manner of forming a guard, as the nucleus of a formidable force by which he might both maintain his dignity and secure his dominions. At the same time he gave the two remarkable sailors the best counsel which the circumstances admitted. These white men appeared, however, to occupy a peculiar position. With estates and great influence with the king, and, as is not always the case under such circumstances, greatly beloved by the people, they nevertheless pined for their native hearths; and, after having made several attempts to escape, they were guarded with such care, that any one aiding their flight would have been put to death by even Kamehameha's subjects themselves, if the king had spared them. Vancouver, however, advised them to remain where they were, pointing out the advantages of the life they now led over that to which they would be condemned upon quitting the islands. He advised them also, after dwelling upon the satisfaction they would therein receive, to devote themselves faithfully to the service of the king, and by their conduct to show an example of humanity and good morals, such as would exhibit to the people the difference between the character of

honest white men, and that of the infamous traders, many of whom came but to rob and demoralise them.

The British captain, who thus benevolently instructed both Kamehameha and those who had acquired the greatest influence over their master, concerning the civil government of his dominions, was also the king's best councillor upon the spiritual affairs of his people; and, in spite of his own modest account of what transpired, we must proclaim him the first Christian missionary that visited these islands. Shocked by the effects of the superstitions that prevailed, he dropped the first seeds of the purer system upon such soil as the moral condition of the natives afforded. In particular, he endeavoured, in his discourse with the king, to show, by every means in his power, that their system of religion was without any evidence of its truth, and that it was condemned by its direct opposition to the constantly apparent beneficence of the Power by whom all things were made. The seeds thus sown, did not for the present, however, so much as raise their green blades of hope above the gross idolatry which was so deeply rooted in the land.

Not long after the departure of Vancouver, Kamehameha undertook an expedition for the subjugation of all the islands of the group, and Young and Davis, and several other fo-

reigners now settled in the islands, accompanied him. His army is said to have numbered 16,000 warriors. The fire-arms they possessed, and the counsel their leader received from the foreigners, gave the Owhyhians great advantages over their less fortunate foes. Thus the islands of Mawhee, Lania, and Molokai, and even Woahoo, were speedily subdued; and some time afterwards the submission of the chief of Kawai left Kamehameha master of the whole group.

As soon as the king was firmly established in his entire dominions, he changed a great portion of the ancient system upon which civil society was based in the islands, more particularly regarding the right of property and the tenure by which it was held. He declared himself to be the sole lord of the soil, which he apportioned out to the chiefs among his followers, on the condition alone of military service when required; and he appointed governors to the several islands, to whom he gave power to regulate all internal and minor affairs. Young was appointed Governor of Owhyhee, and Davis had large possessions confirmed to him; and these two former seamen were now fully identified with the rest of the subjects of Kamehameha.

The private life of Kamehameha was much less stained with the excesses common to this stage of society, than were the lives of the greater part of his subjects, or of those of many abso-

lute princes in much more advanced countries. The king, after a long stay at Woahoo, returned to the hereditary portion of his dominions, and lived sometimes at Kailua, and sometimes at Karakakooa bay.

In the spring of 1819 Kamehameha died, at the age of sixty-six, and was succeeded by his son, Liholiho, then in the twenty-fourth year of his age. A great revolution, both in the civil and religious affairs of the people, had been quietly taking place during the whole of Kamehameha's reign. The influx of a better class of foreigners than had formerly settled, their habits of industry, and the example of a higher degree of morals than had hitherto been known to the islanders, (in spite of the acts of a disreputable set of traders who still visited the islands, and the character of some escaped convicts who came among them,) had much tempered the arbitrary acts of the king, and caused a general relaxation of the rigour which had attended all the superstitious observances; while the universal respect entertained for this extraordinary man, both by his own subjects and by the whites, acted as a check to prevent any loss of his power in the administration of the government generally: all which tended to prepare the way for the new state of things about to commence in the islands.

As the commencement of Liholiho's reign

was only a year before the arrival of the first avowed missionaries, we may consider this to be the era of the introduction of Christianity into the islands.

The mind of the new king, who took the title of Kamehameha the Second, like that of almost all of his subjects who were associated with Europeans, was in a state of extreme disorder in all that appertained to the moral condition of the country. Infidelity, even to inducing ridicule of their ancient system of religion, prevailed; and the moment seemed arrived for the establishment of the faith of civilised men. The women, on account of the state of degradation in which they lived under the old system, were the chief instigators of the violation of the taboo and other hard restrictions which had prevailed; and the priests were the upholders of the ancient system.

In the spring of the year 1820 the first missionaries arrived off Kailua, in Owhyhee, sent out by a society in the United States. The reverend gentlemen to whom the honourable charge had been entrusted were, Mr. Thurston, Mr. Bingham, and Mr. Ruggles. They all had wives, and several had children; and they were accompanied by a medical gentleman, an agriculturist, a carpenter, and a printer. They were visited, before the vessel which conveyed them came to anchor, by two dowager queens, and by Kalai-

moku, the prime minister, who, on account of his having raised himself by his eloquence and his services as a councillor of the king, had received from the Europeans, and bore universally, the title of "Billy Pitt;" and from all of whom they met with the most encouraging reception. The king had indeed already caused the greater part of the idols throughout the islands to be destroyed, which had left the more intelligent of the people, in a position somewhat novel in the history of religious revolutions, and doubtless very favourable for the introduction of the new faith. They were wholly without any religion, save that consciousness of dependence upon some Power unseen, with which nature inspires all rational beings.

The missionaries, notwithstanding their favourable, though non-official reception, remained on board until they received the formal permission of the government to land. They had heard that there were enemies to the mission among the white people that were in the islands, who had tried various means to prejudice the government against them, which determined them to conform to every formality that the most rigid interpretation of the law they knew to be in existence might seem to require. All attempts, however, to defeat the purposes of the mission failed; and, at a general meeting of the chiefs, called for the purpose of considering the

objections that had been made, it was determined that the missionaries should be allowed to settle for a year upon trial.

Upon receiving the report of this proceeding, the reverend gentlemen landed; and Mr. Thurston took up his residence at Kailua, the capital of Owhyhee; Mr. Bingham sailed for Woahoo; and Mr. Ruggles settled in Kawai, at all which stations they were favourably received both by natives and foreigners, save a few of the latter of bad or indifferent character. Everything now went on so prosperously, that before the expiration of their year of grace, the king formally requested of the new instructors of himself and his people, that they would write to their friends in America, to beg them to send out an addition to their number.

But the circumstance which perhaps contributed the most of all to the early success of the mission was, the humour in which the missionaries found the great high-priest of the idolatrous worship. When we consider the history of the superstitions that have in every country, at some period or other, disgraced humanity, and how rarely the priests with whom they originated, or by whom they have been maintained, have been foremost in the good work of reform, we cannot but accept this instance, as an encouraging prognostic of the future success of yet unorganised missions upon a more extended scale; and, we

trust, for reasons often enough given by travellers, upon a different plan from those which have been hitherto undertaken.

The high-priest, Hewahewa, might, indeed, serve as an example to the heads of all idolatrous religions throughout the earth, who, for the gratification of their own vanity, their sensual enjoyments, or for the love of ease or power, combine with the head of the state, and carry on their false system from one generation to another, against the conviction they must entertain of the thorough worthlessness of their dull idols, and of the ill effects of the abominable superstitions they maintain.

Having thus settled the missionaries in the islands, we need not follow them through the course of difficulties which they nevertheless experienced, partly from the suspicions excited in the minds of the chiefs that their aim was rather to obtain political influence than to establish the purer system of religion and morals among the people, and partly from the jealousy of white settlers, who feared the loss of their influence, in proportion to the credit the missionaries obtained. In the meantime, all the transactions of the government were in a greater or less degree subject to the influence which the missionaries personally exercised over the natives.

As general knowledge began to be spread among the people, much curiosity was awakened concerning the great countries from which the tall ships came that visited their islands; and the king, whose progress in his studies is reported to have been respectable, was not exempt from the laudable feeling which manifested itself among his subjects. Thus, partly under this influence, and partly with a view of making friendly foreign relations, he determined, with the consent of his council of chiefs, to sail for England by the first opportunity which should offer. This happened on the 27th of November, 1823, upon which day he embarked on board the Aigle, carrying with him his favourite wife, Kamamalu, Boki his prime minister, three chiefs, and several servants. They arrived at Portsmouth on the 22d May, 1824, whence they proceeded immediately to London, and took up their quarters at Osborne's Hotel.

The adventures of the royal party in the British metropolis, and their sad termination, need only be recalled to the memory of the reader. Our dusky guests excited the usual wonder of everything novel among us; and they were granted an interview with George IV. at Windsor. Unfortunately, however, the king and the queen both died in London. Upon this the English government appointed the Blonde fri-

gate, commanded by Lord Byron, to convey the rest of the party back to the islands, with the remains of the king and queen.

The prime minister of the late king and the rest embarked at Portsmouth on the 28th September, and they reached their islands on the 4th May, 1825.

On the 6th June succeeding, the chiefs assembled, according to their custom on similar occasions, and proceeded to settle the succession, which was determined in favour of Kauikeouli, the brother of Liholiho by Kamehameha's favourite wife, Kaahumanu. This young prince, then only twelve years of age, was accordingly proclaimed king, and Kaahumanu was declared guardian of the kingdom during her son's minority.

Lord Byron, who had by his urbanity acquired great influence with the chiefs, was able to give them very useful advice at the present juncture of affairs, when they were full of doubt concerning every step they advanced amid the mazes of new ideas that were opening upon their minds concerning the government and progress of the people, which the change of their religion and the modification of their manners convinced them could not be carried on without corresponding changes in their civil polity. The British captain strenuously supported the Christian mission, under the reserve, which accorded

with the instructions received by the missionaries from the society to whom they were responsible, that they should not interfere with the political affairs of the country.

While matters were thus proceeding as favourably as could be expected, when all the difficulties necessarily arising from the change of religion of a whole nation are taken into account, the advancement of the people was arrested by the inopportune appearance of two Roman Catholic priests, who arrived at Honolulu in July, 1827. They were appointed by the Pope, with the usual affectation of the head of the Roman Church, of not acknowledging the existence of any other; but they were sent out by a society in France, which had been deceived by the interested and false representations of an adventurer who had resided some years in the islands; and the captain who brought them, being anxious to get them on shore, had landed them in a surreptitious manner.

Open remonstrances were made. The regent and the chiefs, while they expressed their willingness to treat them kindly, represented to them the mischievous consequences which could not fail to attend their settlement in the islands. They pointed out to them that the people had already received one set of teachers, with whom they were perfectly satisfied, and that discordant doctrines would create dangerous dissensions in

so small and rude a community. "In powerful and enlightened countries," said Boki, who was the interpreter of the minds of the rest of the chiefs, when discussing the propriety of permitting the priests to remain, "numerous denominations may exist and live in harmony; but in this small society, any difference in religious opinions among us would beget dangerous contention, that would check the progress of civilisation, and perhaps altogether disorganise society."

Such seems not only to have been the impression of the principal chiefs at that time, but also that of the present king, then in his minority, who has since constantly declared, that had the Protestant missionaries arrived in the islands after the Romish, their settlement would have been opposed.

With respect to the Romish missionaries personally, I am able to report, upon the authority of those the least likely to be prejudiced in their favour, that their lives and moral conduct, since their arrival in the island, have appeared to be unexceptionable. Nevertheless, it appears by their own showing, through their correspondence with the French Missionary Society, which has not hesitated to publish their letters, that they obtained their ends by deception and jesuitical practices unworthy of men of any class, in any society whatsoever.

When the Mass was first celebrated, it made a curious impression upon those whom curiosity had drawn together to witness the ceremonies. They found in the images which they seemed to see worshipped, so great a resemblance to their ancient idols, as to produce upon them a powerful and immediate, but, according to the condition of their minds, a very different, effect. Those who had for some time discarded the religion of their fathers, looked upon the whole as a system of gross idolatry, which excited their abhorrence; while many, who were late or insincere converts, finding their disposition to idolatry flattered by the new sect, fell back to the worship of their ancient deities, whose attributes they found it easier to comprehend; and among the latter was even Boki, the so lately best opponent of the settlement of the priests.

It is much to be regretted that representations were not at a proper time made to the French government, and this easily foreseen state of things pointed out to them, which could hardly have failed to produce the best effect with a people so free as the French from that ultramontanism, and those narrow religious feelings which degrade several other Roman Catholic people.

There were, at the time of my visit to the islands, 11,000 Romanists, upon a population of about 80,000 souls; and it was thought that,

in consequence of the enemies of the Protestant mission having obtained influence over the society in America, that such a relaxation of the efforts of the missionaries would take place as must shortly lead to a great increase of Romanism. The seeds, at least, of discord have been sown, and the venomous tares which have sprung up on the too-fertile ground, will probably increase and embitter the remaining years of the race which this error is fast contributing to destroy.

In 1829, though the regency still continued, the young king began to share the burdens and responsibilities of the government. The regent died in June, 1833, upon which Kauikeouli, now aged twenty, assumed the entire government of the group, under the title of Kamehameha III.

In 1840 the political affairs of the islands were settled as they now stand, by a declaration of rights, both of the people and the chiefs, and a form of constitution something analogous to that which the British race everywhere enjoy.* It was not, however, until 1843 that the independence of the islands was acknowledged by the great maritime nations.† In that year, commissioners from the king arrived in Europe, and obtained from the Queen of England and the King of the French, the formal

* See Appendix. † See Appendix.

recognition of their independence; and they afterwards procured the adhesion of the United States government to the same polity. With these proceedings close the accounts of the more remarkable transactions recorded in the annals of the islands.

CHAPTER VI.

HONOLULU.

Former Impressions — Realities — Harbour of Honolulu — Distant Views — Appearance of the Port — Character of the Population of the Town — The Town — Streets — Buildings — Population — Visit to the British Consul-general — The News from Europe — The Traveller's Residence — Illness from the bad Water — A Native Major — Funeral of Billy Pitt — Native Church — Natives at Church — Droll Scenes — Procession — Clergyman — The King — Ceremonies — The Burial — The Tomb.

BEFORE I landed at Honolulu, I had a very little acquaintance with anything concerning these islands that related to a date subsequent to the epoch of their discovery, and that of the visits of Vancouver. Their very name was to me romance. The animated accounts we have all read of the intercourse that took place between our earlier navigators and the native inhabitants, I remembered only as we retain the impression of some of the leading features of the first work of fiction we peruse, but to which the tragic death of Capt. Cook gave an interest that nothing unreal could raise—

hardly anything surpass. My former dream of times long past, seemed, indeed, but recalled in its fullest freshness, as the whaler sailed along the coast, and the huts and settlements amidst palm groves and cocoa-nut trees presented themselves to our view. But though I confess I was, upon landing, somewhat suddenly awakened from the pleasing vision of societies of men fresh from the hand of our common mother Nature, which the imagination and the memory of early reading had presented, it must not be supposed that we are about to see only the reverse side of the picture of these islands and their inhabitants so long engraven on most of our minds, and to contemplate that view alone which has too many European features in it to possess the charm of novelty we expect to find; for, although we shall presently tread the streets of a semi-European town, we shall subsequently see some genuine traits of the proper native life of the islanders. We shall at least travel where the merchant and planter have not been attracted by the prospects of gain, and where the natives still doze away their listless existence by the fresh brook, or beneath the shade of the graceful palm, amidst the unchanging face of nature, forgetting the past, and indifferent to the future.

The harbour of Honolulu is properly formed

by a mere indent of the coast, and a broad coral-reef, through which there is accidentally a narrow and rather intricate passage, with twenty feet of water only at its shallowest part at full sea. It is conveniently situated with respect to the prevailing winds, and sufficiently capacious to contain above a hundred vessels in perfect security. Outside this reef there is a roadstead with good anchorage, where ships bring up when the trade-wind, as is generally the case during the day, draws out, or when they are of too great draught to pass the reef. Such as do not draw too much water, have generally the opportunity of entering early in the morning, when it is either calm, which admits of their being towed in, or a light air from the sea prevails.

From the roadstead where our ship had anchored, and during our passage on shore, we had a noble prospect under our view. Elevated lands, divided by broad ravines or fresh green vales, were seen terminating in a narrow plain, at the extremity of which, by the sea, appeared the little capital of the islands. As we approached the town, we observed a fortress, which did not appear very formidable, on our right hand, commanding the port; and, as we came nearer, we saw storehouses, small vessels hove down and undergoing repairs, and some of the cumbersome materials of ship-yards,

which altogether gave to the place the appearance of one of the smaller class ports in our American settlements.

About thirty years ago the capital of the islands consisted of between one and two hundred huts, built of dried grass, and inhabited by the natives who subsisted by fishing and the cultivation of the taro root, with a few houses of unburned brick or wood, occupied by some chiefs and a few Europeans. But as the islands, on account of their position and the extent of cultivable land they contain, enjoy advantages above any other of the numerous groups which lie scattered over the wide Pacific Ocean, it is here that we find the Europeans, whether engaged in carrying into effect the constitution which the country now enjoys, or acting as agents of foreign courts, or being mere speculators and adventurers, have chiefly congregated. Thus, this so lately poor native town, has become the centre of everything tending to Europeanize the inhabitants, not of these islands alone, but of all the rest of the groups of the Pacific Ocean, while it is the chief port in the best channel of intercourse between the eastern coasts of the ancient, and the western of the new world.

The central portion of the capital now consists of regularly laid out streets, on either side of which stand houses or warehouses of wood,

constructed after the European style, generally painted, and frequently placed within spacious enclosures with gardens, and inhabited by Europeans (as it will be most convenient to call all the white settlers or visitors in the islands, when no nicer distinction may be required), while its outer portions are still chiefly composed of grass huts inhabited by the natives. Besides these, there are, the king's palace, which is a genteel European building, in good taste, and several public edifices, among which are, the Custom House at the port, and a building near this containing the several public offices, and also two Protestant churches, one Romish church, and the fortress above mentioned.

The population of the capital is estimated at 10,000 souls, about 300 of whom are Europeans, or white men, the greater proportion of these being Americans, or former citizens of the United States, now naturalised subjects of Kamehameha III.

The town was quite familiar to the captain of the Josephine, who had visited the islands before; and, as I wished to pay my respects to the sole resident agent of the British government, Consul-general, General Miller, as well as to inquire for letters, he undertook to be my guide, and we set off at once towards the general's dwelling.

The consul-general's house was situated at

the upper extremity of the town. We found the general in his chief apartment, which opened upon a lawn with flower-beds. I introduced myself without ceremony, and had the satisfaction of meeting a polite reception. General Miller is a veteran of the Peninsula. But he had entered the patriot army in Peru during the War of Independence, and raised himself to the rank of general officer, and been one of the principal leaders during the most arduous struggles of the war, and had received no less than eight wounds.

It was now eleven months since the date of the last news we had heard from Europe, which contained the accounts of the sudden breaking out of the French Revolution of 1848. The latest news which had reached the islands came down to the end of May of the same year, which was just closed; and the general soon put us, thus far at least, into the current of events. Our natural desire to know what had passed nearer home up to the latest date, being satisfied, General Miller politely offered me his aid to establish myself for the time of my stay; but as my companion had previously volunteered his services for that purpose, I was able to decline putting the General for the present to any trouble on my account; and the captain and myself now set off in search of an abode of some sort among the natives or Europeans of the place.

We first inquired at some of the nearest houses, the doors of which we found standing open. Their inhabitants were generally Englishmen or Americans; and one of these directed us to return towards the water-side, as the most likely quarter to succeed in; and here we soon found, within a spacious inclosure, a neat little native house, constructed of dried grass, containing two apartments, and furnished with chairs, tables, and even a sofa. It had been built for, and frequently let to, masters of whalers visiting the islands. Within the ample space in which it stood, there was also a proper native hut, in which the family who owned the property resided, the head of whom was Major Mahooka of the royal army. Eight or ten men and women, as we entered this, were lying stretched out upon mats, all indulging in the most absolute inaction. I took the unoccupied dwelling without hesitation, subject to the arrangement that the little offices of the household should be performed for me by some of the major's family; and, after getting my spare effects up from the boat, in which they had been left when we landed, I was at once installed in my island dwelling.

The morning after my first tranquil sleep on shore, I had the honour of breakfasting with the consul-general; and, late the same day, I was led by a native to the church of the mission, to

join a gathering to assist at the obsequies of a celebrated chief and member of the royal family, who bore the name of Billy Pitt, which he inherited from his father, who had acquired the appellation from the Europeans for reasons already stated in the preceding little sketch of the history of the islands. His body, as well as that of a child of the royal family to be buried at the same time, had been kept three months. The ceremonies on this occasion were properly European; but the scene which the church presented was a compound of the solemn and pathetic, mingled with what was, to an unaccustomed eye, sufficiently droll for the interior of the house of prayer.

The building was spacious, with a gallery, and was filled with benches. The first one or two rows in front of the reading-desk were occupied exclusively by Europeans, who appeared to be chiefly ship-masters, mechanics, and artizans generally, while the rest of the space below was crowded with the natives of both sexes. After marching up the centre of the church, we placed ourselves at the end of one of the benches occupied by the natives, to await the arrival of the procession. In the meantime I was left quite at liberty to take a leisurely survey of the novel spectacle. As there was nothing of the solemn yet to be seen, the droll component in the view naturally first attracted the

attention of a stranger. The missionaries have been especially exact about the dresses of the women at church, and they do not allow the men to enter in the condition of near nudity in which many of them appear at other times. All the women, save a few with some pretensions to imitate more nicely the European fashions, were dressed in loose blue-sleeved chemises alone, and wore straw bonnets. The first-named portion of their dress sits gracefully enough upon them, and seems rather to harmonise with their dark-brown skins, approaching sometimes to nearly a black, and leaves nothing to desire or regret; but their bonnets, in colour and form, and by the style in which they are put on, lead to the most inharmonious compound imaginable. Yellow, or straw colour, is perhaps the worst shade that could be chosen to set off tawny skins; and not two of their bonnets were put on alike. Generally they were placed in such a manner as to bring the part that should have been at the back of the head to the top; and, as this seemed to be what they wished, whether from taste or opposition, it was the easiest to be done, by reversing the front and back of the bonnet, and thus putting it on, as we saw many, hind part before. The women formerly wore merely, and still generally display, as an ornament when they are unrestrained, a very becoming wreath round their heads, composed of small yellow

flowers, real or imitated; but the religion they now profess requiring them to be covered in church, has been the cause of this strange anomaly and amusing spectacle.

The men formerly wore, and still, where they are not much mingled with Europeans, wear, for the most part, merely what is called the *maro*. This consists of a mere strip of cloth, of an inch or two in breadth, passed round the waist, and from the centre of the front part of this, between the legs, to the centre of the back part. They generally now, however, in the streets of the town, in addition to this, wear a blue shirt, much shorter than the shirt we wear; but they put on little or nothing else save what chance may happen to have thrown in their way. Whatever fortune does, however, provide them with, they are sure to display at church, on account of the obligation they lie under of wearing as much clothing as possible when there; which, in conjunction with the appearance of the women, has produced such a scene, as to make a stranger wonder how the officiating clergyman can maintain his gravity while addressing such an assembly. Some of them, on this occasion, had trousers on, and some had none. Some wore their shirts hanging over their trousers, and some had them tucked in. Several I observed, who were near us, had on, apparently, the left-off coats of Europeans, which they wore

without trousers, or waistcoats, or shoes, or stockings.

After some delay, the procession appeared, and marched slowly up the centre of the church towards the desk, which was occupied by Mr. Coan, the officiating clergyman. It consisted of his majesty Kamehameha III., dressed in our Windsor uniform (adopted in the islands at the recommendation of George IV.), of the Queen and her sister, and several of the ministers, who were Europeans, and the agents of foreign governments in their diplomatic uniforms. The king was supported, leaning on the arm of one of the ministers, and appeared ill or affected by the ceremony. On the arrival of the bier beneath the desk, his majesty and the ladies took their seats in pews beneath the gallery on the right of the desk, and the ministers and foreign agents placed themselves near them. Prayers were now offered up by Mr. Coan, in the Kanaka or native tongue, and hymns were sung by the congregation, accompanied by the notes of a small organ, played by a native young lady. After this the clergyman spoke a funeral oration in the same tongue; and the service was concluded by a very appropriate prayer in the English language.

These offices being ended, the procession, which I now joined, again formed, and the bodies of the two chiefs and the child were carried to a

simple stone edifice, at a little distance from the church, where the remains of Liholiho, the last king of the islands, and those of several of the royal family, repose.

During the march of the procession, some of the Europeans, who understood the Kanaka tongue, criticised the oration of the clergyman. They blamed the omission of any mention of the ancestors of the deceased chiefs, among whom there were, it appeared, several of great celebrity in the national annals. This proceeded, they said, from a doubtful policy of the missionaries to let all remembrance of the ancient religion of the islanders, and of those who professed it, pass from the minds of the present generation.

CHAPTER VII.

HONOLULU—(*continued*).

Effects of bad Water—Removal to the Consul-General's—Introduction to the Ministers—Consuls—Walk up the Valley—Views—Reception from Officials—Rains—Contradictory Course of Sickness—Climates—Prevailing Diseases—Depopulation of the Group—Causes of Depopulation—Pernicious Customs—General Indifference to Life—Causes of Indifference—Consequences—Observations in the Hamlets—Want of Sympathy—Sad Proofs of this—School Examination—Speeches—Scholars—School of Nobles.

I WAS scarcely settled in my grass abode, before I became too much indisposed to be long out of doors. My complaint was a disorder in the bowels, proceeding from the use of the water of the low country. The derangement is common to all strangers during the earlier days of their sojourn in the islands. I was not, however, informed of this on my arrival, nor that some of the best water in the world was to be had by sending to the higher lands in the vicinity, which after a few days I learned from General Miller, who favoured me with a call. My con-

dition, in the mean time, had become so bad, that the general, unwilling to leave me to the care of the natives, kindly invited me to take up my quarters at his abode. As with most invalids, I did not at first like leaving my own apartments, but the general insisted, and a few days under his hospitable roof sufficed to effect a thorough cure.

The general, while I was with him, took an early opportunity of introducing me to the king's chief ministers, the foreign consuls, and several of the European merchants or planters settled in the island. I shall mention, for the present, the principal personages only whose acquaintance I had now the pleasure of making. These were, Mr. Whylie, the Minister of Foreign Relations; Mr. Judd, the Minister of Finance; M. Dillon, the French Consul; Mr. Tirrell, the American Consul; and Mr. Ten Eyk, American Commissioner. The two latter-named gentlemen were residing in Honolulu, but the ministers and the French consul, though they had offices in the town, resided upon estates at one, two, or three miles up a broad ravine, called the Valley of Nuuanu, which divides the hills that rise from the narrow plain immediately in the rear of the town.

On our visit to the gentlemen out of town, we proceeded on foot across the plain, by a carriage-road tolerably well formed, and, for a

considerable portion of the way, raised above some marshy lands over which it passed. Upon these lands appeared many native huts, distributed about the country amidst the luxuriant vegetation of the climate. They generally stood in the midst of plantations of the most important production of the islands before the settlement of Europeans and the introduction of the sugar-cane and coffee-tree, and—which still affords the staple article of food to the native population throughout the group—the taro-root, already mentioned, and to be the subject of some further and more particular remarks.

The views, as we ascended towards the higher ground, were picturesque on all sides. At intervals, throughout the lower lands, were seen scattered groves of palms and cocoa-nut trees, while the higher, amidst the rude evidences of former volcanic action, presented the deeper green shades of the varied productions of the cooler regions.

In reference to the object of our walk up the valley, I shall only for the present say that we found the gentlemen we were in search of at home, living in quite European style, and at about a mile from each other on the rising country, with more or less of pleasure-grounds attached to their dwellings; and, as I was in the good company of the British Consul-general, it need not be added that I met a very favourable

reception, and found no reserve in the communications of these high officials concerning such of the affairs of the islands as formed, very naturally, the subjects of our conversation.

I shall now, without any regard to the order of time, proceed to mention such circumstances as came under my observation during my stay at Honolulu, and my communication with such other members of its community as I had the pleasure of knowing.

It was at this time the rainy season in the islands, and although there was much fine weather, and the sky was generally clear, there were at intervals of a few days, severe storms of six or seven hours' duration, which generally occurred at night, and were always accompanied with torrents of rain; and thus, sickness was general among the natives, to whom, however, it was wholly confined.

It seems strange, until we are acquainted with, and consider the causes, that in these latitudes in the isles of the Pacific, the course of sickness and health, in regard to the Europeans and the natives, should be the reverse of that which equally dissimilar races experience in the tropical isles or coasts of the Atlantic. In the islands in the West Indies, and in those near the coast of Africa, quite free from the pestilential malaria of the continental shores, and possessing a similar soil to that of these isles,

and not very dissimilar vegetation, beneath the most brilliant skies, and amidst the abundance of Nature, the white man withers and dies, while the native flourishes; but in the islands of the Pacific the white man lives, while the native dies at such a fearful ratio as to threaten the speedy depopulation of the groups. The superiority of the climate, owing especially to the little variation of the thermometer, mentioned in a preceding chapter, may be sufficient to account for the health of the European races; but for the sickness generally of the natives we must look chiefly to causes which are, perhaps, beyond the reach of any human means to check, and, for the immense proportion of mortality among the sick, to others which must be more particularly exposed.

At this particular time the natives were suffering from no less than three distinct diseases, all of European importation—the measles, the influenza, and dysentery; and they were dying in such numbers that, before I left the islands, upon a population of 80,000 by the latest census, the loss was estimated at 10,000, or one-eighth of the whole population.

Thus it will be seen, that even the causes of their sickness are chiefly such as will admit of no remedy. But the so great proportion of the mortality among them must be attributed, in a very great measure, to an invincible obsti-

nacy, and tenacious hold of some of the customs of their forefathers, which is commonly supposed to proceed from a belief in fatality, but which, it seems more probable, springs from the well-known indifference to life which prevails among men in the earlier stages of society, or in a semi-civilised condition. Their ancient religion rarely refers in such a definite manner to a future state, as to inspire much hope or fear, or to beget a sense of the dignity of our nature, sufficient to keep men from sinking under every real calamity; and the new religion, while unaccompanied by a total change of manners, has never enough hold of the mind to excite either hope or dread of futurity, sufficient to make men cling to life in the manner they are wont to do in a more advanced state of society.

But with respect to indifference to life generally, perhaps I may not inappropriately here also remark, that it has occurred to me to observe this trait in the human character among people of very dissimilar races, of widely different manners, and wedded to customs held as tenaciously as any we shall observe among these islanders; and this, too, both where the first effects of their intercourse with civilised men has been felt, and where ancient superstitions and manners have undergone no sensible change; and I may say that, as far as I have been able to judge, I have found self-respect and value for

life increase in proportion to the strength of men's rational impressions and expectations concerning the future. And this I may also remark, is one of the reasons why I have very confidently in several instances, however I may have differed from some who appear to me to leap too hastily to conclusions at which they desire to arrive, expressed a sense of the necessity of a great change in the manner of carrying out the missionary system generally. These semi-civilised islanders, if we may consider them so far advanced, whatever the cause, at any rate view the approach of death with an indifference that is extremely striking. Some, during illness, will listen to no counsel from any one, and others follow a custom which they see constantly terminate in, if it be not the cause of, death. The moment the least fever appears, they say, "As I am too hot and my blood is boiling, I must find the means of cooling myself;" and, they rise from their mats, and when near the sea, plunge into the waves, or lay themselves down upon the beach for the surf to pass over them. But if they dwell inland, and cannot reach the sea-shore, they search out a fresh brook, in which they lie down at full length. The consequence, in both these cases, is of course the same. Death takes place, even very often in a few hours, but seldom later than the day, after the experiment has been per-

formed. The practice is of ancient date. The several persons who informed me of it, told me also, that great pains had been taken with such of the people as were mingled with Europeans, to persuade them to abandon a custom which had been the cause of the destruction of so many who had gone before them, but, that these counsels had only had effect with, or more properly, that the practice had only been foregone by, a few who were entirely under white control. To these causes of mortality may also be added the want of such aid from their relatives, as all classes of Europeans are ever ready to render to one another, and which arises from a remarkable deficiency in sympathy in cases of illness, as indeed we shall presently see, even with the nearest akin. One of my European friends who mingled much with the natives, informed me, moreover, that there was a general impression among them of their early extinction ; which so broke their spirit, that many when sick seemed to grow worse and to die, from despair and the mere want of sufficient energy to take the commonest care of themselves.

I frequently accompanied the General upon little riding or walking excursions in the immediate vicinity of Honolulu, and was everywhere struck with what we saw and heard of the course of the diseases that prevailed, and the indifference with which their consequences were re-

garded. In most of the houses into which we entered, two or three had been carried off; and in some there was not a single tenant remaining. All had been buried within a month. In one hamlet that we visited, as we came in the centre of the closely-packed group of grass huts, we observed a man, apparently about the middle age, seated upon his mat at the door, and wrapt up as if he were feeling the cold. We approached him, and the General asked what was the reason we saw nobody about the place, and that we did not hear the voices and the laugh of the women, with which a stranger is usually greeted among the natives at the threshold of their dwellings; upon which the man informed us, that every human being in the hamlet, save himself, had been buried within the last week. "And why, then," said the General, "do you not leave the place and come down to the town, where you may be among friends, and where the change may restore both your spirits and your health?" "I do not want to live," said the native, in answer to the suggestion of the General; "all my friends are gone, and I shall soon follow them."

Another day I was walking alone within the proper limits of the town, when five or six young women, seated at the door of one of the grass huts, after greeting me with the accustomed peal of laughter, begged me to

enter their dwelling. The huts of the natives are usually rather dark within, for want of proper windows. This had but one small aperture; and as there was a sort of verandah along the front of the house, under which the women had been sitting, the interior, further darkened by this, was even more obscure than usual. I observed, however, a bed upon a kind of bedstead; and as there appeared to be no other seat, I placed myself upon this. Then as the women all sat down upon their mats, I determined to make an attempt to carry on as much intercourse with them, as a few useful words of the tongue which I had learned from the vocabulary of the missionaries might enable me. The attempt to do this with such a merry set soon led to all kinds of mirth, while the essay was not quite abortive. Questions were asked and answers given on both sides; and our intercourse was becoming more and more amusing, when suddenly, after my eyes were sufficiently accustomed to the obscurity to see better, I perceived a woman lying on her back upon a mat near the middle of the hut. Upon this I asked, half in words and half by signs, why she was lying so still, or whether she were sleeping; in answer to which, one of the young women, also by speaking and making signs at the same time, desired me to go and look at her: on doing which, I observed that she was dressed in the accustomed loose che-

mise, but that her head was ornamented with leaves and wild flowers. Upon seeing this, it occurred to me that she was acting a part in some native ceremony of the bridal day with which I was not acquainted, and I was about to give her a good shaking, when my ear was suddenly struck by words from one of the women, which I knew very well, and which revealed what the colour of the skin alone of one of the white race would have been sufficient to disclose—that she was not sleeping, but was dead. Upon hearing this, after touching the flesh of the departed child of this simple race, to assure myself of the truth of what I heard, I returned to my seat, which I now perceived I had been sharing with the lifeless body also of one of the men of the same race, which was lying in a wooden box or coffin, made in the same style as those in which we lay the remains of our departed friends. The man they made me understand had been dead some days; but I did not discover what relation he bore to them. The young woman, who was their sister, had been dead only a few hours.

General Miller, as anxious in his repose, for the improvement of the rising generation around him, as he had been formerly energetic in storming towns, led me on one occasion to attend an examination at the school for white children,

both boys and girls, established in Honolulu. The examinations were chiefly of the boys. The first subject was English grammar. Questions were put, and the answers were promptly and correctly given, though they seemed to be a little too much got by rote. The next subject was drawing, and after this singing, in both of which the scholars appeared to greater advantage. Then came written essays, the subject being the question, "Which were the most beautiful, the works of Nature or the works of Art?" On this occasion, the essays so much surprised some of the company as to call forth remarks, which obliged the master to declare that he had no share in their composition; upon which, suspicions, whether justly or not, fell upon the parents of the scholars. The business of the day was concluded with appropriate speeches by several of the missionaries who happened to be present, and the General. The former were in approbation of the progress made by the scholars, and, very properly, as complimentary to the master as to his pupils. But the speech of the General was wholly addressed to the scholars, and was chiefly calculated to impress upon them, above all things, the importance of truth, which the orator believed to be too little dwelt upon by the heads of schools generally.

Another day, by the particular request of another schoolmaster, I attended, alone, an examination at the "School of Nobles," which consisted of six native boys and five girls, and two American boys, all of whom were instructed in English. The most remarkable of the scholars here was the native young lady who played the organ on the occasion of the obsequies before mentioned at the church. She was fourteen years of age, and was the daughter of the Governor of the town. Her hair, however, and her skin, were a shade too light to satisfy every one of the purity of her blood. One would have thought that this was a matter of very little importance at Honolulu. It appeared, however, to have produced much talk, until some ingenious or charitable persons happily made the discovery that the colour of the skin and the hair of the native race was much changed when the children ate white bread.

The examination of the boys here was in arithmetic, in which they displayed a remarkable aptitude, and in geography, geometry, algebra, and drawing. Upon the whole I was able to express great satisfaction at witnessing the success of the efforts of the master in so important a cause.

From the school-room we adjourned to the drawing-room of the establishment, where the

young lady just mentioned played upon the piano-forte, the air of the national anthem of her country, which is the same as our own. And after a few more words of encouragement that I thought it my duty to give all the parties, I took my leave.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE ISLAND OF MAWHEE.

Voyage to Mawhee — Fellow-passengers — Incidents — Views—Appearance of Lahaina—Arrival—Rendezvous of the Captains of Whalers—A Judge—Hospitality —Town of Lahaina—Rambles—Buildings—Fruits— Romish Missionary—Tempest—Rambles—Taro Plant —Cooking Pork—Poi—Bread-Fruit—Native Humour —Vegetable Garden—Indigo Plant—High School— Character of the School—Native Idols—Impressions concerning the Native Intellect—Governor Young— Gloomy Prospects—Want of Respect for Men of Colour —Cause of Ennui.

On the 6th February occurred the first fair opportunity of embarking for the windward islands, which I gladly embraced, with the intention of making a more particular survey of Owhyhee, the largest, and, in every sense, the most remarkable and interesting island of the group.

The vessel in which I embarked was the king's yacht, a little schooner of about forty tons, and bound to Lahaina, in the island of Mawhee. Upon stepping on board, I found a number of

natives and several foreigners upon the deck. Among the latter were Mr. Andrews, one of the missionaries stationed at Mawhee; Captain Crabbe, formerly of the United States Marines; Mr. Hubbard, United States Consul for Mawhee; and Mr. Pinchard, Merchant of Lahaina. But before we had been long on board, a boat came off, bringing the king's prime minister, Mr. John Young, son of the prominent character in the little sketch above given of the history of the islands, Prince Alexander, the heir to the throne, with another young prince of the blood, and the wife of the premier, with several young women, her domestics. Of the noble troop, however, only the lady and her maidens were to accompany us. The rest returned to the shore as we got under weigh.

We were not long out of port before seasickness stretched almost the whole party at full length upon the decks. It was towards evening when we sailed, and a bright moonlight night, with perfect calm, succeeded. No one seemed disposed to go below save the noble lady, who retired with two of her maidens. Such of the rest as were not downright ill, cheered by the beauty of the night, discoursed and told tales, and were merry enough through its first watches, though a little disturbed by our companion the consul above-named, who had indulged too much in some inebriating beverage to be agreeable.

After this, the greater part of the passengers rolled themselves up in their cloaks, or wrappers of some sort, and laid down upon the deck and fell asleep. Upon seeing which, I followed the example of the native lady, and descended to the cabin, and turned into a berth that was left for me.

When I came upon deck the next morning, soon after day-break, we were making the most of a fine breeze from the north-east, and every one was busy preparing for our early meal. As soon as our distinguished fellow-passenger came upon deck, with the damsels that had gone below with her the previous evening, we were naturally separated into three parties to partake of our first repast. The tribe of natives upon the forecastle seemed to have nothing to eat but *poi;* but the premier's wife and her party, with a plentiful supply of this staff of life to all the islanders, ate also with good appetites abundance of raw mullet, an equally favourite national dish, though somewhat less plentiful than the poi.

The wind, which had commenced with the day, died gradually away, till there was scarce enough left to admit of our stemming the current, always setting to the westward, or of our making any visible progress. Throughout the day, however, the scenery which the several islands in view presented, compensated for our

delay. We observed that the island of Molokai, which I had seen from the Josephine upon our first descrying the islands, presented upon this side, the same irregular and rude aspect as upon the other.

As the passengers began to get familiar with one another, and the invalids to recover from the sea-sickness of the preceding day, we formed a very merry party; and, with the aid of Mr. Andrews I was able to carry on an agreeable interchange of thought with our distinguished fellow-traveller, who, if her knowledge was not very great, was full of good nature; while several of her maidens by their gaiety, relieved the heaviness of discourse between parties with so few ideas in common concerning either the pleasant or the serious affairs of our lives.

The second night was like the first, calm around us, with the sky covered with its myriads of brilliant lights.

When I came upon deck on the second morning of our voyage, we were just entering the strait between the islands of Mawhee and Lanai; and about nine o'clock, we approached the town of Lahaina, the capital of Mawhee.

The more distant scenery which the island of Mawhee now exhibited was mountainous and irregular, while its shores presented much rich natural vegetation. The island of Lanai, upon the opposite side of the strait, is more regular

in form, but possesses a sterile soil, and is productive of too little vegetation, to exhibit any agreeable views.

As we proceeded, the town opened before us, seated amidst groves of such trees as abound in tropical climates, where the deep green of the bread-fruit, which was predominant, contrasted well with the several lighter shades of the varieties of the palm. The rich vegetation extended as far as we could trace the shores on either side; and, at some distance up the mountain, appeared a sufficiently extensive building, which forms one of the missionary establishments.

We now anchored in the open roads off the town, where there is excellent holding-ground, and shelter during the regular trade-winds, though ships are exposed when the wind, as it occasionally happens, is from the southward.

My white fellow-passengers landed in the first boat that came off, and the natives, high and low, soon followed; but I remained on board, to accompany the captain of the yacht, who had offered to aid me in discovering some place to dwell in during my stay in the place.

Upon our landing, we marched directly to a resort of the masters of the whalers, whose ships comprise almost all of those that anchor in these roads. We found, however, that the place was used only for taking meals, and had no

accommodation for any strangers for sleeping; so we set off in search of some native grass hut. We had not, however, proceeded far, before we met all our white fellow-travellers, who were in search of us. They had landed, I now found, in haste, expressly to endeavour to procure accommodation for myself, among some of their friends, and with the expectation of returning to the vessel before I disembarked. They well knew there was nothing to be had among any of the natives, that would be much better than the open air; and they had now in their company a gentleman, whose name has unfortunately escaped me, who was the judge of the island, and owner of a little estate near the town which he was converting into a sugar plantation, and who came very generously to offer me a vacant apartment in his house, which I gladly accepted.

I dined in company with Mr. Pinchard and the captains of some whalers that were in the roads, on the day of our landing, and afterwards accompanied Mr. Pinchard to make a little promenade through the town, and in its vicinity, with which he was well acquainted.

Lahaina consists of about a dozen European dwelling-houses and storehouses, belonging chiefly to the merchants established here and engaged in supplying the whalers that visit the island, and to the mission, and perhaps about

ten times that number of native huts. It has a fortress, also, of inconsiderable importance, which serves for the residence of the governor of the island.

We saw but few taro plantations near the town. Very little of the famous root is cultivated here, in proportion to the quantity grown in the island of Woahoo. The country is in general too mountainous for the plant, which delights in a low and damp soil. The lower lands, however, abound more in other native productions, especially the bread-fruit, than the sister island. But the place is solely indebted for the embryo European town it possesses, to the roadstead which the straits afford for the anchorage of the whalers, and other ships which pass the islands without the intention of making any stay, or the necessity of taking shelter in a more secure port.

In our ramble beyond the limits of the town, we entered several of the native huts, which we found in general the same as those of Woahoo. But within about a mile from the shore, my companion introduced me into a wood of tolerably close-set trees, where he wished to show me a habitation that he had himself built and lived in for several years, but had now some time since abandoned. After dwelling at Lahaina, and trading with the ships that called at the islands for a number of years, he had amassed a good

fortune for the country, which he had, perhaps, with as much want of taste as of prudence, laid out in building a dwelling in European style, or, more properly speaking, in the style prevalent among Europeans settled in tropical but commonly wealthier lands, and which a change in his fortunes had obliged him to abandon. The wood and underwood had grown up so much since the merchant had last visited the spot, that the path was concealed, and difficult to discover. We did not, indeed, come in sight of the house until we were within a dozen or two yards of it. It was built of wood, and was falling into decay. The bread-fruit and the orange might have been plucked from the balconies, that were shaded also by the broad leaf of the palm. The banana, in its several varieties, formed shrubberies beneath the taller trees, and the ground under these was entirely covered with the indigo plant. This had been sown by the missionaries upon the lands above, where it had been so productive, and the winds had distributed the seed so far and wide, that, throughout the ground to leeward of the farm of the mission it had become quite a weed, threatening, in case of protracted neglect, to stifle every native production of the island.

On our way back to the town we called upon a Roman Catholic missionary settled here. The priest received us with much politeness,

and was quite open in his communications. He had very little hopes of any solid good arising from the mission of his Church in the islands generally. In appearance, he said, the time considered, the progress of the mission was great. Eleven thousand of the natives throughout the group, as above mentioned, had embraced that faith. But he confessed that none that he knew, either understood or appreciated what they were taught, and that their morals were, in reality, no better than formerly.

The night of the 10th of this month was most tempestuous. The broad palm and plantain leaves, which were blown from the trees around us by the furious blasts from the mountains, dashed against the wooden walls of our house with such violence that, at every gust it seemed as if we were about to be swept into the sea; and yet during the whole of the time, which the necessity of keeping watch enabled us to observe, there was not a cloud in the sky. In the morning it was calm; and when communication took place with two ships which were lying in the strait, it was found that, though loaded, they had lain over three and four planks during the gale, but had received no damage. These violent, but short gales, are of very frequent occurrence in the islands at this season; but as they are always from the same quarter, the inhabitants, native

and foreign, know well how to guard against their effects.

Upon the occasion of a walk which I took the next day alone among the native huts, distributed without design about the vicinity of the little town, I had the opportunity of tasting for the first time, the famous bread-fruit of the Pacific Islands. I found a party of some five or six men sitting or lying upon the ground outside their hut, around a small heap of mould, which was smoking as if a smothered fire were beneath it, while a large caldron full of poi was resting by the side of the fire. They invited me to sit down, indicating by words and signs very easy to comprehend, that if I would stay the cooking, I should presently partake of a feast which they believed would be agreeable to me; and, as I seated myself to accept their hospitality, three or four women came out of the house, laughing at the accustomed pitch of their voices.

The poi, when prepared for food, has about the same consistence, as well as the appearance, of arrow-root made with milk; but the method of eating it is about the most primitive imaginable. The inhabitants of the eastern deserts, and of many cities, use nothing but their fingers to eat their meat with; yet all use spoons of some sort or other for whatever approaches the thin consistence of a liquid. But the natives of he great Ocean isles have not yet acquired the

simplest means of partaking of anything that is between a mere liquid and their solid food.

After a merry quarter of an hour spent in laughing about a very little or nothing at all, some of the women placed the caldron of poi in the centre of the party, who all now closed around the famous mess, some sitting, and some half kneeling; and, as the inclination prompted, every one put the forefinger of the right hand into the poi, and, withdrawing it, placed it in his mouth. If this were all to be done in order to partake of the national dish, there would be nothing in it that might much shock the most delicate. But whether it be to give time for all to share alike, or to dwell a little longer on their favourite mess, the finger, as soon as it has left in the mouth what it has gathered from the caldron, is turned about and licked, with such accompanying movements of the arm and the head, and such grimaces, as are too far removed from the elegant to be agreeable to contemplate. Niceness, however, would be very ill-placed on such an occasion as this, and I joined in their feast, and made the best I could of my fingers for the wanting spoon.

I shall take this opportunity of adding a few remarks to those already made upon the important root from which this dish is made. Upon no production of the islands, either indi-

genous or introduced, have the natives bestowed so much care as upon the taro-root, which is the sole succulent plant they possess, and which yields, indeed, their chief article of food. The root is usually planted in swampy lands, or in situations that may be easily irrigated. It is disposed in square patches, regularly diked on all sides, but with apertures in the banks, forming channels for the water, which is made at intervals to flow through the whole plantation, after the manner of the vineyards of Syria. When prepared for food, it is pounded and ground by crushing and rubbing it upon a large polished stone, with a stone in the hand, till, after the mixture of a little water, it is reduced to the paste from which is made the mess called poi. It is known to be very nutritious; though to a stranger's taste, it is sufficiently insipid when newly made, but a little acid when kept, in which state it is usually eaten by the natives.

The advantages which the islanders have derived from this root, on account of the care which its cultivation and preparation for food require, are perhaps almost as great as that which proceeds from their possession of so nutritious an article of diet. By the labour and patience which it has obliged them to exercise, they have acquired habits of industry unknown among the natives of any of the other groups in these seas. The swamps, indeed, in which it

is frequently planted, are fit only for the stoutest men to wade in; and it takes eleven months to attain its full growth.

As soon as the caldron, which was not of the smallest, began to get a little low, the party desisted from dipping; and one of the women threw down the little mound of earth that had been smoking near us, and lifted a sack of coarse cloth, in which was wrapped a small pig, baked whole, which afforded me the opportunity of observing the manner in which the natives usually cook their pigs and their dogs—the only two land animals that they formerly had for food—as well as of testing the virtue of this method of cooking, and at the same time the quality of their pork.

They first dig a hole in the ground, of dimensions proportionate to the size of the animal to be dressed. They then make a fire of dry sticks in this, which they keep burning until the ground is thoroughly heated for several feet around. The fire is then taken out, and the pig or dog, after being wrapped in a cloth, is placed in the hole, upon which the loose mould is now heaped up. Here it remains until the vapour, which issues from the mound the moment the hole is covered, is no longer perceptible, when it is considered that the meat is sufficiently cooked. Our pig, I confess, was not quite done

to my taste; though with beef or mutton—I cannot speak of dogs'-flesh—it would have been otherwise. The natives, however, found it quite to theirs. It was now chopped up with a tomahawk, and torn to pieces with the fingers, after a manner not adapted to beget an appetite with most Europeans, and in which, indeed, I found myself something wanting. With the aid, however, of the accompaniment to this dish, the bread-fruit, I managed to do well enough, to save appearances at least. There was certainly never a more appropriate name given to anything seen for the first time, than that which this fruit has received: not that it has the appearance or consistence, though it has certainly a little of the flavour, of bread; but rather because it supplies its want with the natives, when they, as we, eat food too solid or too gross to make an entire meal upon, while it is insipid eaten alone. The fruit is about the size of shaddock, and has, when baked, the solidity of a half-roasted chestnut. Fresh-gathered, it has slightly the smell of the citron; but it is generally or always eaten cooked.

A friend who had called upon me soon after my arrival, accompanied me one morning, during my stay at Lahaina, to visit the master of the chief school, I believe, of the natives throughout the islands. It is situated a mile or two in the

rear of the town, upon elevated ground, forming the first step of the mountains which rise to so considerable a height in the interior.

As we passed by some native huts a little removed from our path, several laughing women and men, after giving us this accustomed greeting, shouted out also the term "Hayleye!" by which I had been often before greeted by the natives at Honolulu, but had not understood. Upon my asking my friend to explain this expression, I found the word to signify English chief, which the merry men and women had thought proper to apply to me. They seldom see any visitors to the islands who are not either missionaries, sailors, or merchants; and, being endowed with an inquisitiveness very natural, as well as desirable to find among them, they make inquiries, upon the arrival of a stranger, to what order, or to which of the above orders, he belongs; and they usually call every one by their own term or the English, which indicates their avocation or profession, besides their own general term for white men, *houries:* but when they find the stranger does not belong to any order with which they are acquainted, they invent some new term for distinction. In my case, whatever they might have been told, they seemed to have chosen the term that borders on the limits of the highest they make use of to express their ideas concerning the relations men bear to

one another in such states of society as they have seen or are able to comprehend.

The only novelty I observed among the few natives that were scattered about here was a vegetable garden, the produce of which was disposed of at Lahaina. Nothing, it seemed to me, could be better adapted to beget habits of industry among people in the simple state of society in which we find these islands, than the encouragement of the light, profitable, and agreeable occupation of gardening.

We found the waste land everywhere as we proceeded, choked and overgrown with the indigo-plant before mentioned, until we came to a path that led us to a terrace on which the buildings of the grand school are situated. The position of the establishment is very fine, overlooking the town below, and the strait and roads in which the ships ride at anchor, and the less-elevated island of Lanai.

We found the manager of the school, Mr. Alexander, and his lady and family, at home; but, it being the season of the vacation, none of the scholars were present. Though the American Society, from whom the various labourers in the mission draw their funds, is composed of members, I believe exclusively, of the church called the Congregationalists, they have adopted the good practice of the Moravians in sending out married men only, that the lady may be an

example to the mothers and the girls of the families with whom the avocations which the system enjoins may bring them in daily contact. Mrs. Alexander was the first of the ladies of the mission whom I met in the islands, and I was gratified to find her full of such information concerning the progress of the objects generally of the mission, as is only to be acquired by those whose hearts are engaged in the work they have in hand. Her account, however, of the state of morals among the natives, in some essential particulars, was not very favourable. "She could have wished," she said, "to mix her own children with those of the families around them; but she found this to be impossible." All that had been hitherto done, had not been able to make the native women comprehend the peculiar obligations and delicacy of deportment which belong to their sex in particular. In what, indeed, is generally termed proper religious matters, the results of the missionary labours had been happier. If the seed sown had not been productive of all the early fruits that the most enthusiastic spirits had expected, they had very nearly routed out of the native mind all the tares of their ancient absurd superstitions. Mrs. Alexander produced a parcel of little images of gods of wood, which had been taken out of one of the tombs in Owhyhee. She had also in her keeping a little black stone, which appeared only

remarkable from its having a hole in it. By the simple possession, however, of this, it was formerly believed men could catch as many birds as they pleased. All these things were now occasionally made playthings of, by the children of mothers not yet very old, to whom they had been objects of worship. The suppression of the ancient superstitions had been brought about very gradually. One of the means that had proved most effectual with the elder sort was, the respect with which their own children, by their education and the advance they daily made, had inspired them.

There is an impression very general among the white inhabitants of the country, that the natives are in a more especial manner endowed with the mental qualifications peculiarly proper to abstract science. This probably, however, arises from the greater attention given by their masters to their instruction in arithmetic than in most other branches of knowledge, perhaps not only on account of its general usefulness, but also — or at least this seems to have been its effects — for the purpose of impressing all beyond the age of school instruction with the greater confidence in the judgment of those acquainted with the seeming mystery and the results which a few figures proclaim.

During my stay in this island, I had several interviews with the native chief, Governor Young,

whom I found communicative and intelligent. As the Governor could not speak English, our discourse was carried on through the means of an European quite conversant with the native tongue. The chief's conversation, and indeed his whole demeanour, were tinged with a degree of melancholy, which, if it at first surprised me, was much more in accordance with the spirit and fleeting character of everything left in the islands that is peculiar to the native race, than the lively and thoughtless disposition of the people of the inferior classes. He was one of the sons of the famous sailor Young. He had been in England in company with King Liholiho; and one of the first conversations which I held with him was concerning this memorable incident. It will suffice to mention only such portions of the discourse we held, as have not been anticipated in a previous chapter. The Governor attributed the death of the king and queen to their excitement, caused by the excessive attention shown them by the Londoners; but he dwelt upon two circumstances in the history of their adventure above the rest—the interview which George IV. granted the survivors of the party after the death of their king, and an incident that occurred on board the ship that conveyed them back to their islands. George IV. he said, received them at Windsor, sitting upon a bench in the park, and after asking them many

questions relating to the general affairs of these islands, promised them his protection in case of the interference of any foreign power with their independence. Moreover, upon their asking the king his opinion concerning the respect due to the missionaries who were already in the islands, his majesty, he said, very strongly advised them to embrace the religion brought among them, and to imitate the lives of those by whom they were taught.

The Governor next, in the melancholy strain which seemed habitual to him, even while expressing the enjoyment which he had had during his sojourn in England, said: "What chiefly occupied our thoughts while in England was, the incomprehensible causes of the vast difference between men in the state of civilisation attained by Europeans, and men in the simple condition of the pure natives of these islands; and what has chiefly since occupied my own thoughts have been reflections concerning the little hope to be entertained of preserving the existence of the race to a third generation. Only the highest among you," he continued, "who will never visit the Pacific, would be in a position exalted enough to hold the balance of justice, and bring about the sole means of saving the natives from utter extermination, even perhaps before the maturity of the next generation—the mingling of the races, if not by means hitherto

tried with very little effect, by some other that might prove more effectual. By George IV. we were treated with a respect very different from that which we now receive from Europeans of mean rank, even to his majesty's appointing a frigate to carry us back to our islands. Moreover, we found matter for reflection on board the frigate as well as on shore. As there was not sufficient accommodation in the cabin for so large a party, we were put among the officers in the gun-room, which shocked these gentlemen so much that they refused to sit at table with us, declaring that they would not eat and drink with savages. Their murmur, however, soon reached the ear of Captain Byron, who sent them word that they might have their choice, either to eat with the guests of their sovereign, which he said was the light in which he must look upon his passengers while on board his ship, or to mess with the seamen in the forecastle."

After this, the Governor, in a more general manner, spoke in the same despairing strain concerning the prospects of the native race. "Everything," he said, "that concerned them he believed, in spite of the benign endeavours of the missionaries, both physically as regarded health and capacity, and also morally, to be retrograde." He thought a capital error committed by the mission had been a chief cause of

the unsatisfactory result. This was teaching the natives so long, almost exclusively, through their own language. It might have been better, he said, that their tongue had never been reduced to rules and writing, for a very few books could ever be published in it. But he added, that he did not see this error until it was too late for himself to learn the English language properly, and that he would now willingly give half the time he had to live to be able to read English, if it were only to afford him a source of amusement of which he felt greatly the want.

CHAPTER IX.

VOYAGE TO OWHYHEE — WAIMEAR.

Fellow-Passengers — Weather — Arrival at Hawaihae — Views — Widow of the Sailor Davis — Son of Davis — Owhyhian Judge — Visit to the Remains of an Idolatrous Temple — Description — Kamehameha's Dwelling — Cruel Superstitions — Human Sacrifices — A Native Lady of Rank — Departure for Waimear — Journey — Extremes of Climate — Vapours — Whirlwinds — Rains — Mr. and Mrs. Kenway — Hospitable Entertainment — A long-settled Londoner — Numerous Cattle — Wild Dogs — Catching Bullocks — Sheep — Losses caused by the Dogs — Loss of Douglass, English Botanist — Earthquakes — Difficulties of Travelling — Change of Route — Return to Hawaihae — A Wild Bull — Use of a Dog — Departure for Karakakooa Bay.

At length, on the 21st of February, I embarked for Owhyhee, the island, in a historical as well as geographical point of view, the most remarkable and most interesting of the group. It was here that the great navigators of the past age, held the most intercourse with the inhabitants of these islands. It was here that Kamehameha the First, on whose high qualities we have dwelt so

much, reigned at the time of Cook's as well as of Vancouver's most interesting visits. And it was here that the memorable incident occurred which has impressed the name of Owhyhee upon the minds of all Europeans more strongly than that of any other island in this ocean—the tragic death of the great discoverer of the group.

The vessel by which I made this passage was a small trading craft belonging to some of the natives, and carrying a cargo of sweet potatoes and yams, and a number of passengers, both men and women. We sailed late in the evening, with a light breeze, which gradually died away as we increased our distance from the land, until it became calm, without a vapour to obscure the wonted brilliancy of the tropical night.

I was the only white man on board, but our skipper spoke some English, and he proposed to put his little cabin at my disposal, to occupy it exclusively, if I would, while he himself and all the rest on board remained on deck; which I mention merely as a trait of manners, exhibiting the degree of respect felt by the natives for the white race. I gladly, however, took one of two berths it contained, but upon condition that the other was occupied, and that no one who wished to descend should be prevented so doing as long as there was room upon the cabin deck, and I

had no want of chattering companions during the night.

Early the next morning the north-east trade-wind came down, and we hauled dead upon a wind, now making a course by which we might expect to fetch the island to which we were bound. As the day advanced the wind increased, and the vessel became very wet, but before noon we had the island full in view, presenting a rude and irregular outline of high lands, terminating in two snow-capped mountains, which were the more distinctly seen as the sun approached the west, contrasting the pure whiteness of their summits with the deep blue of the eastern sky.

The breeze continued, and as the day closed we were rapidly approaching the island. As we came under the influence of the land the wind hauled a little to the northward, which was more in our favour, and during the night we anchored off a small port called Hawaihae, where there were some storehouses belonging to Mr. French, the principal English merchant at Honolulu.

As the next day broke, the view of the mountains in the interior of the island was most magnificent. Their very summits did not appear above an hour's walk from us, though the distance was upwards of twelve miles.

It happened, by some accident or other,

that I had not had the pleasure of making Mr. French's acquaintance at Honolulu, but I had been furnished by Mr. Judd, the Minister of Finance, with a letter to Mr. Kenway, Mr. French's son-in-law, who was residing at Waimear, at the distance of a morning's ride from the shore, in charge of an establishment connected with the raising and export of cattle, which abound in their wild state in a temperate climate, throughout the moderately elevated lands of this island.

Upon landing I found the buildings here in possession of a young European, of Mr. French's establishment, who obligingly sent a native off without delay with my letter to Mr. Kenway, without whose aid there were no means of reaching the upper establishment.

I was fortunate, also, in meeting another of my countrymen here, Mr. Robertson, who had been long settled at Honolulu, and who, after paying a visit to Mr. French's estates, was on his return to Woahoo, and he very kindly offered to accompany me to inspect some curious relics of the customs of the last generation of the islanders, to be seen in this vicinity.

Besides the above letter of introduction, I had another from a friend at Honolulu, to a native lady-chief, of great age, residing here, whom I purposed now first to visit. This was

the widow of the sailor Davis, only second in celebrity to Young, as we have seen in the early portion of the history of the connexion of the native with the European race. On coming to the house, we found the lady was at one of the other islands; but we met her son, Mr. Davis, now judge of this district of Owhyhee, who gave us a polite reception, and offered to accompany us in the capacity of amateur guide upon our little excursion of curiosity.

The famous remains we were about to visit, consist of portions of the anciently principal *heiaus*, or temple of idolatrous worship, throughout the islands. After walking about a mile and a half along the shore south of Hawaihae, we came to a spot where we found the first step of the mountains that rise to so grand a height in the interior, composed of the *débris* of later eruptions of the existing volcanoes than those which had formed the more habitable part of the shore where we landed. Of the once famous temple, in which were so lately celebrated the idolatrous rites of a cruel and barbarous religion, there is in reality but little more remaining than serves to confirm the accounts given by the earlier English navigators, and by many of the islanders still alive, concerning the ancient practices.

This *heiaus* consisted either of two departments, one of which was on a step of the rise

of the land above the other, or of two distinct temples built and occupied at different epochs. After mounting from the beach about thirty or forty feet, we arrived at the first temple, or part of a temple, where we stood amidst a mass of rude, unhewn stones, among which nothing was distinguishable that might serve to throw any light upon the ancient usages of the priests and people. In front of it are still to be seen the remains of two small stone houses, which had been respectively the residences of Kamehameha I. and King Liholiho.

After climbing a pathless steep to a further elevation of about two hundred feet, we came to the later constructed *heiaus*, or better conserved portion of the remains, where our guide now became very useful in explaining the character of what was here distinctly to be seen. The building appears to have been about 150 feet in length, and about 100 in breadth. Three walls of loose stones, of 15 or 20 feet in height, form the inner side and the two ends, while the outer side, at the edge of the steep, appears to have been open to the sea. There is no appearance of the temple having been covered. Besides the exterior walls, others remain, by which the building is divided into four unequal departments, with the character of which our friend was perfectly familiar. One large department, forming the centre, comprises

two-thirds of the whole area, and the three other departments form a chamber at each end, and a narrow space within the longer of the outer walls. This latter portion seems to have been the place within which the god Kaili, to whom this temple was especially dedicated, and a number of inferior deities, stood exposed to the view of the people. Only a single pedestal, however, now remains, upon which it is well known formerly stood the principal god of Kamehameha I., Punkohula, whom that renowned warrior carried with him in all his wars, and who probably, in his attributes, so eclipsed his brother deities during a time of war, as to centre all the worship, as Kamehameha centred all the power, in his own particular person, throughout the islands. The spaces at the ends seem to have been occupied by the priests. That at the southern end is divided into narrow chambers, or gloomy cells, where the priests are said to have chiefly resided, and from which they issued only when the whole area of the grand department of the temple was filled with the worshippers of the idols before whom they practised their abominable rites, and at whose altars they offered their sacrifices of human victims. Part of an altar here remains, upon which they habitually burned these victims. But beneath the temple, out of the direct line, a projecting rock marks

the spot upon which Kamehameha sacrificed to his god, the famous chief Keoua, who had disputed with him the sovereignty of the island.

On our road back from the *heiaus*, we met the wife of our guide, a native lady of no little importance, who was taking a morning promenade, accompanied by sixty attendants of her sex, or about the number of persons which we had supposed the little settlement to contain.

Early in the afternoon, our messenger returned, bringing with him two horses and a guide, and a polite note from Mr. Kenway, with an invitation to me to come up to Waimear; for which I set off immediately, accompanied by the guide.

Leaving the shore, we soon came upon rough rising ground, productive only of such wild vegetation as no sterility of the soil in the tropical climates can defy the growth, save the bare rock or the burning sands, upon which no dew descends, and over which no rivulet finds a passage. The ground became gradually steeper as we ascended, and our path more intricate; but with every step, we perceived an increase of vegetation, consisting of coarse grass and shrubs, and a few small trees. In the meantime the scenery about us, and the distant views, began to excite that interest which belongs to an elevated country, where the efforts of Nature oppose one another, armed on the one hand with

the rude tempests of the higher regions, accompanied with whirlwinds of snow and sleet, and on the other with the soft winds from a lower elevation, or from the sea, which arrest the onward fury of the tempests, and convert the cold vapours into refreshing showers.

A wall of thick mist was now before us, to encounter which we were already well cloaked. The snowy summits of the mountains upon which we had gazed from the lower lands had some time disappeared from our view, while on the other hand the sun, now about to sink into the ocean which we were leaving behind us, gilded a lower and far-extending stratum of vapours, which, after escaping from the tempestuous regions that engender them, are wont to hang suspended upon the denser air, until they dissolve and fall in showers upon the lower country, or till they are dispersed by the winds that accompany the next meridian sun's rays.

We entered into the proper mountain mist at about 2000 feet above the level of the sea, after which we soon met the cold easterly blasts, which, after rushing through the breaks and passes of the mountain regions, sweep at intervals over the elevated plain, sometimes with the violence of the winds in the high northern latitudes in the depth of winter.

Some small rain, into which the mists that

at this height assume all forms that the element of which they are composed is susceptible, had gradually dissolved, was just changing to confirmed showers as we came in front of Mr. French's mountain establishment. The higher lands were now again visible, and we appeared to have entered a basin of the mountains, from which there seemed no retreat save that by which we had gained the elevation. Mr. Kenway met us at the commencement of his enclosures, from which a step brought us to his dwelling. At the door, as we approached, stood Mrs. Kenway, ready to welcome the stranger. Their mountain habitation was built of wood, and constructed in a more solid manner, and much more suitably disposed for the climate at this elevation, than any of the houses in the lower country. Within, it very much resembled the abodes of the richer sort of farmers in our North American provinces, and was spacious, with several apartments, and conveniently furnished.

Mrs. Kenway, apart from all the ordinary considerations in relation to guest and hostess, was to me an object of great interest, as the first lady I met with of the mixed races. The women of that caste of the under classes are neglected, and seldom excite much interest. We have seen something of the descendants of the two remarkable white sailors, yet nothing

indicative of the survival of any portion of the energies which these two enterprising men possessed; but from the daughter of an English gentleman, we might expect to perceive some foreshadowing of the future history or course of manners of the islanders, some type of those doomed in the next generation to mould the form of society in the islands, something more cheering than the previous chapters of this volume might lead any one to anticipate, and I was not disappointed. I have seldom, I may say, met a lady possessed of more easy manners, taste, and natural refinement, than the hostess of this occasion. Mr. Kenway had been an extensive traveller before the attractions of his present wife put an end to his journeys, and established him in this retreat in the mountains; we found no want, therefore, of subjects for mutual entertainment.

After dinner, Mr. Fay, with another Englishman, came to welcome the stranger in the mountains. These gentlemen were not young, and had been many years settled in the islands. There was something to me of the highest interest in this instance also, in meeting with two of my countrymen transformed into mountaineers of the Pacific. Their occupation was the same as that of Mr. Kenway, upon a humbler scale. They had been, like most of the earlier European inhabitants of the islands, sailors in

their youths, but had forsaken the sea for the easier life on shore. Mr. Fay had been born and bred in London, and still retained the peculiar accent of the Londoners of the eastern extremity in particular of the town. His native parish was Rotherhithe, upon the banks of the Thames, below London Bridge, and of which he said he remembered every alley and corner. He mentioned by name all the aristocratic families of that quarter in his day, about half a century ago, comprising merchants, ship-builders, doctors, and clergymen; and he seemed to think that no enjoyment he could receive would equal a trip, if he could make it, to visit the court in which he played marbles when a boy. He had some regrets, however, connected with the place of his birth, which were, chiefly, that he had no cause to remember the school-master with the rest, for he had, unfortunately, not been taught either to read or write, which placed him very often in an inferior position to the meanest native instructed by the missionaries.

I learned from my friends here, that it was believed there were about 100,000 head of wild cattle in these mountains, which had all proceeded from the one or more pair left by Vancouver, on one of his memorable visits to the islands, and of which I have not omitted to make particular mention in a previous chapter. Their

number, however, was now in a fair way of being much reduced by the wild dogs, which were very numerous, and subsisted upon the calves, few of which the cows were any longer able to raise. A quantity of poison had been imported by the government for the destruction of these voracious intruders, and a large portion of it had been forwarded to one of the native officials in this island, with instructions to distribute it, disguised, throughout all the temperate regions of the mountains. But, whatever benefit might have proceeded from this, which it was thought, however, would not have been great, the country was for the present deprived of, by a stupid superstition on the part of the man to whom it was entrusted, who had taken it into his head that the opening of the box would be the cause of his instant death.

The mountaineers have several ways of catching the wild bullocks. They had had some Chilians among them, from whom they had learned the use of the lasso, in which they were now very expert. This, however, is more frequently employed to catch those that have been previously taken and placed in an enclosure. The greater number procured in their wild state are shot, as we shoot our wild deer; but many are caught in pits. A hole is dug large enough for a bullock to fall into. This is then concealed and covered with fresh hay, till the

sweet scent attracts the wild animals, which fall in, to be afterwards raised alive, and placed in an inclosure, or killed or exported, as may happen to be required.

Sheep are also bred by these mountaineers in considerable numbers. Mr. Fay had a standing stock of 700, but they also suffered much from the wild dogs. He kept several tame dogs, which were always a match for an equal number of the wild. But his flock had been attacked only a few days before this, by a whole herd of the voracious animals, which had destroyed twenty-seven sheep, as well as three or four dozen geese, before they were mastered by himself and his dogs.

It was in this vicinity that Mr. Douglass, the English traveller and botanist, lost his life, by means which still remain a mystery, in the islands. Some circumstances discovered, upon which reports have been founded respecting his unfortunate end, were so variously related to me, both here and in the other islands, that I could not repeat anything that would, with certainty, throw the least light upon the manner of his death.

Fifteen days before I arrived at Waimear, there happened here a very severe shock of an earthquake.

The tour of the island, which I contemplated making, is not always practicable, without a

journey even of some months, on account of the natural obstructions to travelling, which a great portion of the rudely-formed country presents. The two places, above all others, which engage the interest of the traveller in Owhyhee, lie on different sides of the island. These are the great natural phenomenon and geological wonder, the volcano of Kilauea; and the spot where the greatest of our navigators of the last century ended his glorious career of conquest over the difficulties and danger that had so long kept this fair portion of the earth wholly concealed from our researches, and so many races of our species unknown to one another. The sea, to the latter of these places, at least, offered by far the easier route; but there were neither boats, canoes, nor craft of any kind, to be had: I had, therefore, determined to make my way across the mountain districts in the interior of the island. But the day after my arrival at Waimear, while I was, by the aid of Mr. Kenway, arranging a plan of travels, which were somewhat doubtful in the result, a messenger unexpectedly appeared, bringing the news of the arrival of a shallop belonging to Mr. French, at Hawaihae, actually upon her way to Karakakooa bay, the very scene of the memorable event just alluded to. I therefore determined to retrace my steps and embrace the opportunity of proceeding by this vessel.

Mr. Kenway proposed to accompany me to the shore; and after I had taken leave of his amiable and hospitable lady, we set off well cloaked and provided against the mists which still filled the air. It should be mentioned, however, that it is only at this season, that such bad weather is experienced at so moderate a height above the sea in this island; and only during the prevalence of strong winds, when the position of the district, in relation to the high mountains in the interior, affects the temperature and character of the atmosphere. We had scarcely descended 1000 feet, by the ordinary estimate of the height of places that we passed by, when we experienced the same great change in the temperature which I had found at the same altitude ascending; and soon after this we felt again the welcome warm ray of the tropical sun. We had now again, also, on one side of us, a fine view of the expanse of the ocean, as far as the distant horizon; and on the other, the wall of mist, which appeared forming itself into clouds, as we proceeded, only to pass away in thin fleeting rains as they left the region in which they were nourished.

We had a little adventure upon our journey. While we were passing over one of the verdant steps of the inclined country, we met a native, on horseback, and without arms, who had been chased by a wild bull, which, on account of the

less courageous character of the bulls in the mountains than in the lower country, he believed to be mad. He recommended us to return and procure arms, as he thought we could not otherwise make good our journey, without great risk. We were, however, disinclined to this, and we filled the ample side-pockets of the coats we wore, with large stones for arms, with which we were determined to try conclusions with the beast.

We had not proceeded much farther when we observed the bull standing in our path, with his head turned towards us; upon which we prepared our arms, and continued our way, fully bent upon the somewhat hazardous combat. The bull being of the same mind, after regarding us a moment, stepped out, and was presently at full trot towards us; while we were meeting him at a jog pace, each with a large stone ready for his skull, if it might be attainable. But at the moment we had our hands raised to launch our missiles, quite unexpectedly, a large dog belonging to Mr. Kenway, which had been forbidden to accompany us, and had not been seen by either of us till now, rushed from behind, and flew at the bull, which, whether surprised into his senses, or better pleased to encounter a foe of the species he had doubtless often met in the mountains, furiously engaged our timely ally, which enabled us to

pass tranquilly on, until the dog joined us, none the worse for the efforts of his enemy to toss him in the air. Before night we arrived at Hawaihae.

Early the next morning my friend returned to his misty dwelling; and on the same afternoon I embarked on board the shallop, accompanied by Mr. Robertson, with whom I had visited the *heiuas* a few days before, and who had been long contemplating making the same tour that I intended. This was a very satisfactory arrangement to me, as Mr. Robertson had been living many years at Honolulu, and was perfectly familiar with the language of the natives.

CHAPTER X.

VISIT TO KARAKAKOOA BAY.

Departure from Hawaihae — Squally Coast — Views — Kailua — Concealed Harbour — Arrival at Karakakooa Bay — Description of the Bay — Geological Formation of the Coast — Aspect of the Bay — Villages — Anchorage — Reception by the Natives — Landing — Burial-places — Reception on Shore — Site of the Massacre of Captain Cook — A Sentimental Moment — Reception in a Native Hut — Intercourse with the Natives of the Bay — Cook's supposed Divinity — Cocoa-Nuts — Bread-fruit — Agreeable taking Leave — Memorials of Cook.

We sailed from Hawaihae late in the afternoon. The district immediately east of this little settlement, wears the appearance, from the sea, of being wholly formed of dark beds of lava, rising one above another, till they approach the snowy summits of the two high mountains in the interior. The wind was moderate, and off the land; and we glided smoothly on through the long and unbroken swell, at a short distance from the shore. But the trades are very uncertain at this season, more especially under the lee of

elevated land; and at sunset the wind rushed down from the pass of Waimear with such violence, as to compel us to put our little craft under close reefs for several hours. The gales here, however, are usually of short duration; and after we had passed the first headland, called Cape Kariahoolahooka, the wind died completely away, and we had a perfect calm for the remainder of the night.

In the morning, a light breeze off the land favoured our progress, and we passed the little capital of the island, called Kailua, which we were afterwards to visit. The views on shore were now changed from dark beds of lava to verdant hills, valleys, and ravines, always crowned by the white mountain summits, and at intervals bordered by a low coast, with groves of cocoa-nut trees and groups of native huts, which are ever seen together. In the evening, when we were eight miles from the bay to which we were bound, we passed an indent of the coast called Kawlua. Here, the master of our bark, who had been some time engaged in making coasting voyages among the islands, informed us that there was a fine little harbour, which was not generally known, and had not been subjected to any kind of survey. He stated that he had entered it, and that it was formed like that of Honolulu, by a reef of coral rock, which, as far as his observation had gone, had

at least a pass, with a depth of two fathoms of water throughout.

Among the objects of interest on shore, some of our men, all of whom were natives, pointed out to us a grand slide down a steep hill into the sea, to descend which was formerly one of the amusements of the people, but which was abandoned when the present influence of the missionaries over their manners had been attained.

Early the next morning we entered the famous Karakakooa bay. There can be few among us, who are not familiar with the particulars of the most memorable event in the history of the discoveries of the last century, of which this bay was the scene. The bay is broad, and not so deep that it would have formed a harbour or safe anchorage upon any but a western shore, within the latitudes of the trade-winds. It presents scenery that is at once picturesque and characteristic of the climate; while the disposition of its shores, and the materials which compose them, throw some light upon the formation of the island. In front of the approach from the sea, along the entire bottom of the bay, appear volcanic cliffs of considerable height; and, from the summit of these the land gradually rises in fresh and verdant hills, growing less and less productive as they recede from the shore, until all appearance of vegetation is lost on the sterile sides of the more elevated

regions of the mountains from which the elements of the soil proceeded. The material, on the other hand, of which both sides of the bay are formed, after passing on either side of the bolder land, has spread out the country to the depth of the present bay, and formed low shores, and in some places sandy beaches.

On our right hand, entering the bay from the sea, we observed a considerable village amidst a profusion of cocoa-nut trees and palms, at the termination of the cliffs, beyond which the country is formed by the rudely deposed *débris* of the later eruptions, and exhibits but little or no vegetation. On the left hand, where the event occurred which has given such undying interest to Karakakooa bay, the shore bears the same evidence of a similar formation; though judging from its fertility, and the variety of the vegetation with which it abounds, at a somewhat earlier period of the geological history of the island. From the termination of the cliffs to the extremity of the shore on this side, appear the cocoa-nut groves and scattered huts which compose the almost unvarying scenes along the low shores of the fertile portions of all the islands.

We "brought up," rather nearer to this side of the bay than to the other; and our anchor was not long down, before we had five or six canoes alongside, all loaded with bread-fruit, bananas,

and cocoa-nuts, and manned with natives in their accustomed simple maro alone. Their object, though they brought such an ample supply of the products of the island, was not so much for the purpose of trading with us, as to gratify their curiosity and love of novelty. There had been no foreign ships in the bay for a long time, and the little trading craft that occasionally visited it had suspended their voyages since the commencement of the maladies which had been committing such fearful ravages throughout the group. They had, therefore, the moment they saw the vessel in the offing, collected as much as they could of what they thought would make them most welcome; but they pressed nothing more upon us than we wished to take, and contented themselves with coming on our deck, and making inquiries concerning the health of the people at the places which we had visited.

My fellow-passenger and myself, leaving all the crew save one, and all our native visitors, to enjoy their intercourse and make their exchanges, now took the shallop's little jolly-boat and our native seaman, and pulled on shore on this side of the bay. The man we pressed into our service belonged to one of the other islands, but he had been at this place before, and he undertook to be our guide, and to give us all the information we might require concerning

the tragic event of which we were about to visit the site.

The little arm of the bay, which we here crossed, was almost a mile in breadth, and seemed capable of containing half a dozen large ships, well sheltered from all winds save such as are very rare, and blow immediately into it.

As we approached the shore, our native pointed out to us numerous caverns, high above the water in the perpendicular cliffs that formed the inner side of the bay, where there is no beach. These, according to his report, were ancient burial-places of the natives. They very much resemble such places in many other parts of the world; and, so remarkably so, those seen in the rocks, cliffs, and sides of mountains, and along the banks of the Nile in particular, both in Upper and Lower Egypt, that a traveller, of half the imagination of some who find in the resemblances of vague customs such strong evidences of the descent of these islanders from the lost tribes of the Jews, might here easily discover enough to speculate profoundly upon their Egyptian origin.

Our native also pointed out to us a natural curiosity at the base of the cliffs that form the bottom of the shallow bay. This was a rock standing out quite independent of the rest, with a large hole through it, as if it had been expressly placed here for the purpose for which

it will be one day doubtless required,—that of aiding in heaving ships down, which, on account of the inconsiderable rise and fall of the sea, may be necessary for repairs.

We had some trouble to find a place where we might conveniently land, and soon, good reason to doubt our guide's having acquaintance with anything he pretended to know. The shore was junked with masses of lava, sometimes lying a few inches beneath the water, and preventing us approaching near enough to step with our feet on dry ground. But while we were pulling about to find a fair landing, some of the natives, who were already on the beach, beckoned to us to take a course which, at length, brought us dry on shore, where we very soon found ourselves in the midst of a group of men, women, and children, who, we had no doubt, had come to welcome our arrival. The men wore generally nothing but the maro; but all the women were dressed in the same loose blue chemise worn by their sex in Honolulu. We were much struck, however, by the total absence of the gaiety that we had observed in the native women everywhere else, but which, whatever might be the cause, we found at least more in unison with our feelings on this occasion than their ordinary humour would have been. We did not ask any questions at

present; but, after exchanging with the the accustomed salutations of the country, we followed our guide, whose newly assumed confidence had caused us to forget our doubts of his being of the aid to us we required, until we arrived at about a hundred paces from the place at which we had landed, when he stopped to tell us that we stood upon the spot where Captain Cook fell from the blow which caused his death. The party of the natives, however, who knew very well what we were looking for, had followed us, though they neither said anything, nor noticed in any way our proceedings, until my companion, in their own language, questioned them in these words: "Men of Owhyhee! is this the spot where our great countryman, Captain Cook, fell, when massacred in this bay?"

I cannot easily forget the change that came over the countenances and appearance of the whole party, both men and women, at these words, while I could yet only guess their purport. They all hung their heads, and looked as sad as if they had been themselves the perpetrators of the deed, and we the first of Cook's countrymen that came to visit the bay since the event. They led us, however, to another spot, which was immediately beneath their own hut, at the water's edge of a broad beach of lava, where they pointed out the exact spot upon

which they said Lono, (the name, for reasons to be presently mentioned, by which Cook is remembered by the natives,) fell and expired.

We now asked them to relate all they knew of the sad event; upon which they gave us an account that did not differ materially from that of Captain King, and which, it is very probable, they had learned as much from European visitors to the bay, or the missionaries, as from traditions extant among themselves. Some of the actors, indeed, in the scene, who lived at other parts of the island, may possibly have not long passed away; and there is even an old woman still living in this vicinity, who, a girl at the time, remembers perfectly well seeing Cook. Yet it is probable that even witnesses of, or sharers in the deed, would have found less credit with those to whom they related the circumstances with which it was attended, than would have been given to European visitors and missionaries.

When we had held a little further discourse here, we each broke off a piece of the lava to carry away with us, in accordance with the established custom of travellers who chance to visit remarkable places; after which we were led by the natives to the hut nearest to the shore, where we had our part to play in a scene quite as characteristic of the earlier age of the islanders as we could possibly have desired.

The hut was much larger than most of those I had previously entered, and was built, as its tenants informed us, upon the site where the ancient kings and chiefs of the island sometimes resided, at a time when there was a populous village here. It was now inhabited by a native agent of the Government.

On our entering, some of the women placed a short bench for us to sit upon; and the rest, and also the men, appeared as much inclined to hold a set discourse with us, as we ourselves were to have as much intercourse as possible with them. We now more than ever felt transported back to the epoch in the history of discovery, when the inhabitants of these islands first gazed with so much wonder upon our tall ships and their white crews. The women had, we observed, been occupied in making some mats or bed-coverings of coarse wool, all of which they put aside before they seated themselves, as if determined fully to enjoy the novelty of conversing with us, of which the rare occasion of hearing any white man who was not a missionary speak their language, seemed doubly to enhance the value. Our discourse was directly of the visits and the death of Cook, who, at the epoch of his arrival, as well as after the event, was supposed to be a god. But here it must be remarked, that Akua, the word in use among these islanders, which is usually represented by

the term we apply only to beings of at least a higher order than ourselves, means no more than a hero, magician, or any man possessed of qualities which surpass those of common mortals; and it happened that there were traditions among the people at the time of Cook's visits, concerning the life and actions of some wonderful personage named Lono, who had long since, suddenly disappeared, probably blown off the coast in his canoe, but who, it was generally believed, though several generations had in the meantime intervened, would one day reappear; and Cook was supposed to be this same Lono. The mysteries concerning the return of their god or hero transformed to a white man, accompanied by men of another race for his subjects, and without any memory of his former language, does not seem to have given rise to any kind of inquiry; yet there is nothing either in this or in the adventure itself more surprising than many incidents we find related in the histories of pretended supernatural events with which the records of the human race in all ages abound.

As our intercourse with these good people proceeded, they asked us a question, which seemed to indicate either that they felt the stain of the death of Cook still attach to them, or that they believed this to be our impression. They asked us, indeed, what we thought would

be the means best adapted to expiate the crime of which their fathers had been guilty in the massacre of Lono; and to this we thought it most proper to reply, that though no guilt could possibly rest upon themselves, the best manner by which they could assure the world of the sincerity of their regrets for the act of their fathers, and show how real was their progress in civilisation, would be to warmly embrace the religion in which the missionaries were endeavouring to instruct them, and to imitate the lives which their examples taught.

They now brought us bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, upon which we made a very fair meal. After this, we rose to go in search of some memorials left by other travellers, of their visits to the bay for the same purpose as ourselves; and at this moment our interview assumed quite a new phase. All the women appeared suddenly to have regained their wonted cheerful dispositions, if not their full gaiety; and one of the more aged, whom I had caressed after the manner Nature never fails to prompt us to do with "good old souls," when we think kindness abounds, now put her arms round my neck, at the same time begging I might be told, that they chiefly desired that I would give a good report of them on my arrival among the countrymen of Lono at his proper home. Upon this, some surprise, certainly not

displeasure, manifested on my part at the amusing embrace, led to another move in the same agreeable vein. Our party had greatly augmented since we entered the hut, and there were now at least a dozen of young women present among the rest; and the old woman turning and pointing these out to me as they sat on the ground, begged, if it were agreeable to me, that I would select one among them to embrace in return for the caress she had given me. Upon this a mere look, that was purely accidental, brought up the belle of the party,—

"Diana's lip
Was not more smooth and rubious,"

"nothing loath" to receive the embrace so justly due. By all this they doubtless wished to impress upon the stranger countrymen of Lono the altered character of their race since the arrival of the Europeans: for it is not impossible that they attribute more blame to their fathers on account of the death of Cook, than we ourselves, with all the attendant circumstances before us, now ascribe to them.

It may also be here remarked, in just extenuation, not of this alone, but also of other similar events, that, from all accounts, given both of the death of Cook and of many other mishaps which attended the earlier intercourse between white men and the natives of

the Pacific generally, it is evident that the hostility of the natives was commonly the result of some sudden impulse, without any attempt to ensnare their victims, or to carry on protracted warfare. Thus it must be inferred that their assaults—and this agrees with the accounts given by the native historians—when not made by outlaws among themselves, generally proceeded from the superstitious terrors with which the strangers inspired them. White men to them were gods, as the narrators of transactions which take place between civilised men, and savages to whom everything that is uncommon is supernatural, are wont indeed to call whatever excites wonder, though, unless we keep the worthies of the mythology of the nations of antiquity in our minds, we might as well say devils. Men, indeed, in the earlier stages of society, generally believe in spiritual beings, which they embody in many forms, chiefly human, without any distinct ideas of them apart from those they entertain of their heroes of tradition, or their most ferocious tyrants. Fear is commonly the passion alone by which men at this time can be restrained from committing the greatest excesses to which their natural desires prompt them; and to excite this, is the sole or surest means of enforcing respect for the laws and obligations of the community to which they belong. The

gods or devils — it little matters which — appeared among the islanders. There needed no other proofs of their supernatural character than such acts as the Europeans were often too ready to perform. Disputes arose, such as were natural between opposite parties ignorant of each other's tongue. The whites exercised their power in a manner that excited just such terrors as evil spirits, we might be sure, would desire to raise. The untutored savages were amazed, —their senses were confounded,—

> "These supernatural solicitings
> Cannot be ill, cannot be good."

They remained no longer masters of themselves, and were prompted to destroy the beings whose acts only excited terror and the desire of revenge.

We now went to inspect the little memorials of the visits of others to the bay. About a hundred yards from the beach, stands a portion of the trunk of a cocoa-nut tree, set in a bed of mere loose stones and broken lava, and bearing several plates of copper, upon which appear the following inscriptions, rudely stamped, apparently with a punch. The largest of these had been so badly executed that we could only read a portion of it, which was as follows :—

"This bay was visited by her Majesty's ship Carrysford, Right Honorable Lord George Paulet."

A second plate bore the following inscription :—

"This tree having fallen, was replaced on this spot by her Majesty's steam-vessel Cormorant, G. T. Gordon, Esq., Captain, which visited this spot May 18th, 1846."

The third has the following :—

"This sheet and capping were put on by the Sparrow Hawk, September 16th, 1839, in order to preserve this monument to the memory of Cook. Give this a coat of tar."

The fourth is as follows :—

"Near this spot fell Capt. James Cook, R.N., the renowned navigator, who discovered this island A.D. 1778. His Majesty's ship Imogine, October 17th, 1837."

We now mounted an inclined way over rough blocks of lava, which brought us, at about a mile from the bay and about 500 feet above the water, to an equally unsubstantial and rude memorial of our countryman, whose fame will survive any marble monument that may record his acts. This consists of a mere post, of about ten feet in height, set in loose blocks of lava, enclosed within a wall of the

same material, and bearing the following inscription, upon a plate of copper, at the top of it :—

> "In the memory of Captain James Cook, R.N., who discovered this island A.D. 1778. This humble monument is erected by his fellow-countrymen, A.D. 1825."

These were doubtless the officers of the Blonde.

CHAPTER XI.

VICINITY OF KARAKAKOOA BAY.

Departure for Burial-place of the Kings of Owhyhee—Geological Remarks—Road—Rude Lava Plain—Fatiguing March—Village of Honaunau—Wailing the Dead—Assemblage of Natives—Hut of a deceased Chief—Officials—Catalogue of Effects—Visit to the Site of the Ancient Tombs—Place of Refuge for Peace and War—Remarkable Customs—A concealed Harbour—Return to Karakakooa Bay—Change of Route—Departure for Kailua—Character of the Country—Village of Hauhauha—Hospitality—Curiosity of the Natives—Supper—Want of Water—Ancient Cannibals—Effects of Christianity—Improved Condition of the Women—Importance of knowing the Customs of the Country.

After the inspection of the rude memorials which mark the place of the greatest historic interest to the European traveller in these islands, we passed over to the opposite side of Karakakooa bay. Upon landing here, we proceeded to make a tour of the village above mentioned, which we found containing about sixty grass huts; after which we set off on foot for Honaunau, which is remarkable, as the ancient burial-place of the

kings of Owhyhee, and is situated about three miles and a half south of this bay.

The country we now passed over was calculated, more than any we had before seen, to throw light upon the origin and geological construction of the islands, as well as to show the recent date at which a portion, at least, of the chief materials of which they are composed properly attained the order necessary for the habitation and maintenance of men in any condition of society, or even, of creatures less dependent than we, upon the produce of our common mother Earth for the preservation of their existence.

At scarce a hundred steps from the cocoa-nut groves by the shores of the bay, we found ourselves mounting a steep path, rudely formed among vast heaps of broken-up lava, which conducted to a rough plain of a few hundred feet in elevation, inclining downwards towards the sea at the distance of a mile on our right, and upwards towards the mountain from which the deluge of burning matter had proceeded. No vegetation and no habitations were to be seen, after we entered upon this desolate waste. Nothing was visible but the huge heaps of the volcanic substance, which encumbered the whole face of the land. A path had nevertheless been formed from the bay to the place to which we were directing our steps, and, as it appeared, at

a cost of labour such as nothing we had hitherto seen in this island had prepared us to find bestowed upon any native work whatsoever.

After about two hours' fatiguing march, we came in sight of the village of Honaunau and the burial-places, from the top of a declivity, from which we had to make a descent equal to the ascent upon the opposite side of the plain. The village lay immediately beneath us, but the site of the tombs was upon the opposite side of a small bay made by a shallow indent of the shore.

As we descended, we perceived a number of people moving round from the opposite side of the bay towards the village; and we distinctly heard the sounds of voices uttering at intervals loud cries, which my companion soon recognised for those of women, who, within their dwellings, were wailing, most probably, according to their custom, some personage of distinction departed. We observed also, before we came to the shore, several huts placed with more than the usual regard to regularity with respect to the road, and farther than is commonly seen from the cocoa-nut groves, which here also abound by the sea-shore.

After passing these, still descending, we perceived an assemblage of persons gathered about the door of a hut of unusual dimensions, which seemed to confirm my companion's sup-

position; and as the presence of two strangers appeared here to excite much less curiosity than is commonly exhibited by the islanders, nothing prevented us entering among others to see what was going on within.

As we stepped into a spacious room, we observed a large and varied collection of the sort of articles which, being curiosities in Europe, naturally enough gave us the idea of a museum. Among the most conspicuous were two canoes, which were nearly of the same length as the hut; fishing-nets, which were hanging from beams beneath the roof; mats in abundance, and in great variety; tomahawks, calabashes, surf-boards (of which we shall by and by have occasion to see the use), and spears. The hut was half full of men, who did not appear to belong either to the class of the curious or the thrifty, such as a museum or place of sale might have attracted. By one of the corners of the hut, however, we observed a group of some twenty or thirty men, evidently attracted by something of particular interest, and towards which we therefore directed our steps. The natives gave way as we approached, just in the manner idlers give place at the approach of men who wear the dress of officials, or are plainly principals in some business in hand; and, as we mingled with the rest, we perceived two men of the pure native race, seated among others upon the

ground, and who were evidently officials of some sort, from their dresses and the manner in which they were occupied. They wore European trowsers and shirts, and had sheets of paper before them, and pens in their hands; but the moment they saw us, they rose and shook us by the hands, just as great personages in a more advanced stage of society recognise one another in the midst of the undistinguished multitude. Our new friends now invited us to sit down upon mats beside them, when, as they continued their previous occupation, they informed us they were agents sent by the Governor of the island, residing at Kailua, to collect and make an inventory of the property of all kinds left by a chief lately deceased, and at the same time to set down all the information they could obtain concerning his affairs generally; for which purpose they had summoned all the men dwelling in the vicinity to attend them this morning at this the late chief's dwelling. We were much struck with the facility with which they seemed to write a language only so lately figured in such characters as civilised men have long employed.

As soon as we had sufficiently enjoyed the novel scene before us, we informed our friends of the object of our visit to this place; upon which they obligingly put us under the guidance of the smartest-looking fellow at hand, with authoritative directions to show us all that remained

of what formerly belonged to the ancient burial-places, which we chiefly wished to see.

As we descended to the shore of the narrow bay, our guide informed us that the village contained forty huts, but not more than a hundred inhabitants. We had not proceeded far before we found we had half a dozen men, and probably all the children of the village, in our company.

After passing round the shore beneath the village, we came to the point forming the extremity of the south side of the bay, which was the site of the ancient tombs. The ground here was almost entirely formed of beds and blocks of lava; and all that remained to show to what purpose it was formerly appropriated were some rough walls, constructed of lava, broken into irregular masses, a few decaying stakes, and a cavern imperfectly covered by an enormous block of lava, but in which, we were informed, still remained the bones of several of the ancient kings of the island.

Near this spot there is a more remarkable enclosure, of about two acres in extent, of which the rude walls, of three or four feet only in height, are formed of the same material as those of the tombs. This was one of those places of refuge, called *He wahi in puuhonna* in the native tongue, which, as before mentioned, have served for evidences to support the theory of some who trace the descent of this people from the Jews.

Be this matter as it may, they withdraw as much from the sanguinary character of the islanders, as the ancient cities of refuge withdrew from the no less cruel disposition of the ancient people. The law or sanctioned custom of retaliation for injuries, with the one as with the other, appears to have been attended with such fearful consequences as to have given rise to this means of preventing the uncontrolled reign of ferocity, and the utter annihilation of the race. Not that shelter from the vengeance due for private injuries was the sole or chief use of these asylums. Those who fled to them during peace were, for the most part, guilty of great crimes, such as violating the taboo, which being considered the greatest of all, was otherwise punished with immediate death; or slaying men, which was a crime with them of inferior importance; or theft. During war, they offered a safe retreat for the women and children, and old men, who all fled to them when the strife was at hand, where they found huts with accommodations, in which they remained in perfect security; and the same with the vanquished parties, when they were able to reach them. The gates always stood open, and the enclosures had all one or more temples in them, with officiating priests, who received with kindness all those who came, without any regard to the degree of their offences, and put to death those who pursued

them, if they approached within a short distance of the enclosure. After a few days, all who took refuge for offences were allowed to depart, sanctified and absolved, and, under the protection of the gods, safe from molestation of any kind on account of the past.

The place was now full of cocoa-nut trees, thickly sown, and no longer retained any of its former virtue. Near to, or forming a part of its walls, our guide pointed out to us a block of hewn lava, that we judged to be about thirteen feet in length, which was preserved in remembrance of an ancient chief, who is said to have been of the length of the block when lying with outstretched arms upon its surface. If this be no exaggeration, the chief must have been of enormous dimensions indeed. There is no tradition of any of his acts resembling those of Goliath.

One of the intelligent natives here informed us, that about four miles south of this place there was a commodious and very safe harbour, formed by a coral reef, through which there was a passage with no less than eight fathoms of water throughout. The thing seemed to us so probable, from the character of the coast, and the imperfect manner in which it had been hitherto surveyed, with the difficulty of discovering the precise depth of water at all points of a coral reef, and, of so much importance,

that we should have made an attempt to ascertain the truth of the report, had we been able to obtain the means. But being without either canoe, lines, or leads, none of which could be procured here, we were forced for the present to content ourselves with cross-examining our informant, and afterwards, with reporting all the information we were able to obtain, at the seat of the government at Honolulu.

On our return to Karakakooa bay, we found the shallop was to sail the next day for Kailua, the place of residence of the Governor of the island, situated about fifteen miles north of this bay, and from which she would return to Hawaihae. We determined, therefore, after having thus far gratified our curiosity, to make our way on foot to join her at Kailua, with the intention of re-embarking and returning to pursue our further travels by the route of Waimear, considered to be that alone which was practicable between this coast and the part of the country in which was situated the second great object of our curiosity in the island, the mighty volcano upon the mountain of Mauna Loa.

Our path now lay across a plain composed of broken-up lava, like that on the opposite side of the bay, but upon which soil enough was occasionally seen, with the wild vegetation of the climate sufficiently advanced to give evidence of the earlier formation of this side of

the bay than the other. The high cliffs along the bottom of the bay lying between the two lava districts, and forming the bounds of a rising country well covered with vegetation, no doubt formed at some not very remote period in the geological history of the group, the extremity of a promontory, which having turned aside the streams of lava during successive eruptions at different periods, caused the formation of the country on either side the bay, and, as before observed, of the bay itself, by the new streams of the volcanic matter extending a greater distance into the sea than those of earlier eruptions.

When we had marched about three miles, we came to a village called Hauhauha. By the term village, it is proper here, however, to mention, is meant any collection of huts, scattered or near together, exceeding about half a dozen. We inquired of the first of the natives we met, where we should find the best hut in the place, and we were conducted to one above the ordinary size, in which three or four men and seven or eight women were residing. They all rose from the ground, upon which they had been sitting or lying, as we entered, and came to give us the merry welcome rarely wanting beneath the roofs of the native dwellings. The floor was almost wholly covered with mats, and the hut was divided into two parts by a curtain

of coarse cloth, of native manufacture. As it was not yet dark, however, and the heat of the day was over, we soon came out again, accompanied by all their party, to enjoy the evening air. Their dwelling had been placed at thirty or forty yards from the point of a piece of land projecting from the bottom of a broad rising vale, lying open to the sea, at the distance of about half a mile. Our hosts gave each of us a bench to seat ourselves upon, while some of them laid down upon the grass, and the rest occupied themselves in preparing poi and fish for our supper.

We had not, however, been many minutes seated, before we perceived a dozen or two, men, women, and children, coming with all possible haste round the vale beneath us on either side, for the purpose, as we soon learned, of welcoming the *houries*, any of whom they had rarely had an opportunity of seeing; and presently the whole population of the place, amounting to about eighty men, women, and children, were assembled, all so full of gaiety and kindness as to render our reception as agreeable to us, as our visit could possibly have been to them.

While the repast was preparing, we asked for what we most wanted, a good draught of water. But this we found to be among the greatest of the wants of our hosts, and to procure

which they were obliged to send two miles up the elevated country in the rear of them.

We now put ourselves in a reclining posture upon a mat they had laid out for us, while the natives, in whose front ranks crowded the women, sat, reclined, knelt, or stood around us, and, as my companion entered into discourse with them, our intercourse became the most jocose that can be imagined.

The first thing they brought us was a large calabash full of the constant poi, which we endeavoured to eat by taking it up with the forefinger of the right hand, after the manner of the country, as before mentioned, but which we managed so awkwardly as to cause fresh motives of merriment among the younger portion of the women especially. They next brought us some green cocoa-nuts, a part of the substance of which was of the consistence of thick cream, while the remaining portion of milk, supplied in some measure our want of water till the inestimable luxury arrived. After this they put before us some fish, toasted over a fire they had made with a few sticks, and as we ate these with the cream of the cocoa-nuts for sauce, the mirth of the party was without bounds. But the women chattered, and sometimes said things in a suppressed voice among themselves, that my companion was not able to hear or understand, upon which we insisted

upon knowing all that had passed; when one of the old women proceeded to tell us that they had been chiefly amused at the surprise and remarks of the children at seeing us eat the fish cooked; it being the custom of the natives, though the elder sort knew very well that it was not ours, to eat it raw. But when the old lady observed we now laughed with them, she entered upon some revelations which, though they amused us, and excited again the greatest merriment among the younger portion of the party, did not seem to inspire the elder men especially with the same feelings. "Good houries," said she, "it was not fish only that we ate raw before the missionaries taught us the new religion. When I was a child, half the number of us that are now present would have found your two white bodies, fresh killed as we should have eaten them, at least in a time of scarcity, but a meagre meal."

While the old woman was making this revelation to us, I observed that several of the younger women appeared moved by what she was saying, but they soon became merry again as she proceeded to tell us what was the condition of their sex in those dark days of their history. Not only were they, all their lives, she said, in a state of such degradation that they were not even permitted to eat, as we have had occasion before to mention, in the presence

of the men, nor at any time to eat any portion of the animal used for food, save such as they now throw to the dogs, but, when old, they were killed out of the way, or suffered to die from neglect.

It is curious to observe, how we may sometimes, quite unintentionally, give offence to people whose customs are very different from our own. During the time we were carrying on this little intercourse with these people, we observed an old man, who was the only one of the party that was not sitting, kneeling, or reclining on the ground, with a countenance the most sullen, to mutter something, and then slink away in a manner that, had we not known we were among a set of the best-natured people in the world, would have set us upon our guard against some treachery or other. All that now, however, came into our heads was, curiosity to know what had offended the old fellow; and upon inquiry, we learned that he had said that I had beaten both his wife and his daughter, whom he had desired to place themselves, one on each side of me, to make me as happy as possible. On hearing this, I remembered that it happened that I had patted them both on the back in the way absolutely of caress; upon which, indeed, I had observed them to shrink back and look full of fear, instead of displaying the pleasant humour that the same act might in Europe have put good folks into, who should

have borne something like a similar relation to us in the intercourse and chance-mingling of the different grades of society into which we are necessarily divided.

The too bright sun of the tropical day, whose diminished force had invited us to pass the evening in the open air, sunk beneath the glittering waters of the calm ocean in front of us, without attracting our attention to the change, until the quick approach of night reminded us of the necessity of repose after our fatiguing day's adventures.

Upon re-entering the ample hut, we found it lighted with chips of a resinous tree, called the kukia, which abounds in the higher lands. The flickering lights were stuck in the sides of posts that supported the roof of the hut, after the manner of the Siberians. Mats were now spread out for our beds, and we laid ourselves down upon these and slept soundly until the morning.

CHAPTER XII.

JOURNEY BETWEEN KARAKAKOOA BAY AND KAILUA-KAILUA.

Renewal of our Journey—Village of Kynaleho—Hospitality—Village of Keauhua—Description of the Native Sports in the Water—The Surf-Board—Manner in which the Men combat the Sharks—Feats of the Children—Customs—Fruit Repast—Confidential Communications—Harbour of Refuge—Departure—Improved Condition of the Country—Amusements of young Women—Healthy Districts—Arrival at Kailua—Description of the Capital—Buildings—Missionaries—Governor—Quartered with the Governor—Fort—Dwelling of Kamehameha I.—The Rev. Mr. Thurston—Dinner at the Missionary's—Romish Priest—Romish Church—Encounter Mr. Hall—Governor's Politeness.

We rose the next morning with the first appearance of day; and, after taking an affectionate farewell of our kind friends, we continued our journey. Our path now lay across rugged beds of lava, amidst which we observed but spare indications of vegetation at distant intervals, and generally in the ravines, which, though still dry, seemed designed to form the

beds of future streams destined one day to water a verdant and abundant country.

After about two hours' march, we reached a village called Kynaleho, where we experienced the same warm reception as at the last village of the previous evening. We entered the first house at which we happened to arrive; and, as we were now in a comparatively fertile vale, we were able to obtain some bananas and bread-fruit in addition to cocoa-nuts and fish, such as we had supped upon at Hauhauha: and we made a hearty breakfast, in the good company of laughing women, wondering children, and good-natured old folks. After two hours' sojourn here, we left these good people, with the regrets with which we never failed to part with any of the natives we visited during our tour. We often compared them, as we passed from one village to another, to children at their holiday time in Europe, before the cares and responsibilities of life have somewhat saddened the spirits natural to youth, or as it too often happens, changed the characters of men, and dried up the sources of good humour and benevolence.

About mid-day we reached the village of Keauhua, where I had the satisfaction of witnessing, for the first time, the famous ancient sport of the country played in the water, upon what is termed by Europeans the surf-board.

This is truly a famous and animating diversion, but, for what reason I know not, now discouraged by the missionaries, and no longer played with the same spirit among the islanders whereever the Europeans are mingled among them. But as we are now so far removed from the seats of innovation upon former customs, the occasion may be as favourable to describe as the opportunity we then had was of witnessing this sport. I shall, therefore, note all we observed from the best possible position for the purpose, with as much minuteness as the novelty of the diversion to an European, with the character of the sport and the place together, may seem to demand.

We had remarked as we approached the village, that the country was, within the vale in which it is seated, more fertile than any we had before met with; and we found the mere eight or ten huts of which it consisted, placed apart from one another in a grove of palms, cocoa-nuts, and plantains, through which the rays of the sun were at intervals seen sparkling upon the gently agitated surface of the ocean. There seemed also to have been some little more attention paid here to the style of construction, and to the position of the huts, than we had before seen. They had large shady porticos of trellis-work covered with trained vines, which we now

saw for the first time; and several had orangeries planted about them.

After passing by one or two huts which had not an inhabitant within them, we met some women, who told us that all the men, women, and children of the place, save themselves, were sporting with their surf-boards in the water, and that the Government agent, for whom they supposed we were in search, had gone to the seat of government of the island. Upon hearing this, we determined to witness the national sport, and our new friends readily volunteered to conduct us to the most convenient spot for the purpose.

Upon issuing from the grove, we came opposite to a small bay formed by two promontories, and cliffs of no great elevation, and with a low beach at the bottom. Our guide led us on the left side of the bay, more than half the distance to the point of the promontory on that side, where we found five or six other women and some children seated upon the rocks, all contemplating the spectacle in the water, which thus affords at the same time a diversion for those who engage in it, and for those who witness the feats of agility and courage that are performed.

Had I not known that we were to see what I had heard much about since my arrival in the

islands, or had we come accidentally upon this promontory without being prepared for what we were to see, I could scarcely have believed at the first sight of the natives, engaged as we now saw them, that we were looking upon creatures that were not absolute habitants of the sea, or at least amphibious. Three or four and twenty men, women, and children of all ages above seven or eight, were distributed over the bay and beyond the promontories, acting such a part amidst the turmoil of the breaking seas, as we might only suppose the beings of poets' imaginations to be capable of performing. Nature seemed to have formed this little bay for the express purpose of giving the natives the opportunity of carrying their feats in the water to the utmost verge of possibility, as well as for the spectators to witness the exhibition with the greatest advantage. The form of the bay, combined with the inequality in the depth of the water within and without, owing, doubtless, to the presence of two coral reefs, caused the sea to break, first with terrible turmoil, half a quarter of a mile beyond the promontories, and again with less force within them, at something more than that distance from the bottom of the bay; and these two lines of broken water were each chosen for the basis of the performances of one of the two distinct parties into which these semi-amphibious

beings were divided—that beyond the bay for the men, and that within for the women and children, the feats of both of which could be perfectly seen from the cliffs upon which we were now seated.

The surf-board, from which this sport derives its name, consists merely of a thin plank, on the average about a foot in breadth, and from four to five feet in length. The party engaging in the sport, upon entering the water lies flat upon this, and swims out from the shore towards the breakers upon which he intends to play. Some of the breakers which form the two bars, leave a smooth surface of foam after breaking, while others roll on from the outer bar to the inner, or from the inner to the shore at the bottom of the bay. If the swimmer meet one of the rolling and broken seas before reaching the line upon which it broke, he slips off his board, and dexterously dives under its curling head, and appears again when it has passed over him, with his surf-board in hand. Then he again places himself as before, to continue swimming in the same direction, until he reaches the bar upon which the sea broke, or that which it is his aim to attain. Arrived here, he is now seen floating between two of the three breakers which usually burst successively upon every narrow bar, diving under these severally as they pass on, till one

of them bids fair to roll on in the manner the white-topped waves are sometimes wont to do, to a great distance, without exhausting themselves or falling quite over and leaving nothing but the carpet of foam upon the smooth surface of succeeding swells. Upon observing this, he turns from the broken water, and swims slowly onward, until overtaken by the running swell, on the slope of which he now places himself, lying flat on his surf-board with his feet upwards, and strikes out, or so maintains his position, that he continues sliding down the wave, with the broken water behind him, at the same rapid rate that the wave rolls, till it exhausts itself, if from the outer bar, or till it arrives within a few yards' distance from the shore, if from the inner. In the latter case he is subjected to the danger of being thrown upon the shore with great violence, and to the risk of bruises and even broken bones where there happen to be rocks, all which he escapes by slipping from his board in the same manner as when among the breakers, and diving to appear again in the rear of the rolling wave before it tumbles over on the shore. The great difficulty, and therein the chief merit of the performance, consists in keeping upon the steepest part of the rolling sea, which brings the swimmer so near its foam, that he is sometimes lying in almost a perpendicular position, with his head

downwards, upon the advanced side of the white-topped swell, as it sweeps on towards its goal. By this he is exposed to the effects of the crash of the broken water before he has time to dive, and, after making a summerset, with the temporary loss of his board, to the laughter of the rest of the swimmers as well as the spectators on shore.

While we sat watching them, the parties were distributed between the two lines of breakers, and within the inner line, in the act of rolling onward, or returning to the bars, or lying between the breaking seas, diving and reappearing, till the time seemed favourable for their long roll towards the shore. The women, whom we could distinguish by their long hair, and also the girls and boys, appeared to us to perform their part amidst the turmoil of the minor line of breakers as dexterously as the men along the outer line. That they do not generally trust themselves farther from the shore, is rather on account of the sharks, which the men are prepared for, and seek to contend with, than from any distrust of their capabilities in the water. The sole weapon used by the men in combating the shark is a dagger or knife, which on other occasions, when fishing, they stick in their maro, to be used merely when, as it frequently happens, their canoe is upset, and they are attacked by the voracious

fish before they can put their little craft again upon her bottom and resume their seats. But when they are engaged in this sport, the weapon is attached to the surf-board. If now attacked, the shark has no chance with them. At the approach of their enemy, they feign fear and swim away from him, at the same time exhibiting all sorts of awkwardness, until they give the equally cautious as voracious animal, sufficient confidence to approach them. Then they dive under him, for he is not an active fish in the water, and thrust their dagger into the under part of his body; upon which, even the stoutest of the species will turn and retreat, sometimes to escape, but often in such a condition as to be easily pursued and vanquished, and after the action triumphantly towed on shore.

It is the custom of the islanders, more especially when they have no other means of showing their hospitality, to make themselves as agreeable as possible to strangers, by placing by their side, one or two of the younger women, who, if a common language be wanting, will, at all events, laugh the most weary traveller out of the most sullen humour that ever accompanied fatigue. But on the present occasion we had in our good company, only several old men and women, and some children, and they seated by our side, the two elder among the girls, whose intelligence and quickness in answering

questions put to them about the diversion we were witnessing, were as useful, to myself at least, as their merriment was refreshing to us both. We frequently expressed our admiration at what we saw, to the great delight of all the party; but upon asking the little girls near us, whose ages were probably between seven and nine, whether they intended, when a little older, to join in the sport, they declared it to be their daily amusement; and, without waiting to be asked to display their dexterity, they ran and picked up two small surf-boards that were lying near us, and set off in great haste to join one of the parties in the water.

Arrived at the beach, the girls slipped off their sole robe, and after leaping into the sea, soon reached and mingled with the rest in the exciting sport; and I confess, when I saw these little creatures sliding down the side of the swell which runs with such rapidity before the rolling surf, and diving to avoid its crash, when the curling wave was about to break over them, there seemed to me to be something absolutely superhuman in the feats they accomplished, so far were they above anything I had deemed it possible for any creatures whatsoever to perform in an element not their own.

This bay, indeed, as before said, possesses peculiar advantages for the sport; and we, probably, saw the performances of the most expert

swimmers in the islands. The healthful diversion is still the favourite of the few remaining national exercises of the natives throughout the group. I was informed by the missionaries and by others, in proof of its popularity, and of the constancy with which it must have been practised for ages, that many of the natives spend whole days in enjoying themselves in this manner in the water. I was informed also, that Kamehameha III., then the reigning king, was known thus to divert himself even from sunrise to sunset, taking his meals of poi during the day without ever coming on shore. This was not, however, at the seat of innovation, and of the present government, but at or near Lahaina, in Mawhee, which his majesty made the place of his sojourn when disposed to quit the scenes which continually reminded him of the decrease of nationality among his subjects, and the loss of independence, of his race.

After passing the greater part of the afternoon in witnessing these performances of the natives, we returned with our friends to the village, and at their instance proceeded to the house of the government agent, which was in charge of one among the men who were with us; but as we here found nothing inviting within, we sat down upon some mats, under the shade of trained vines supported by a frame similar to that of our trellised arbours.

As soon as we were seated at our ease, some girls brought us a quantity of oranges and grapes, both of which I now saw for the first time in the islands; and, over these we carried on a conversation with our friends, who continually increased in numbers, until they comprised nearly all the inhabitants of the village, and during which we learned some particulars concerning the civil condition of the natives far removed from the seat of the government, but of which I shall repeat only what may seem most to the purpose.

As soon as they were assured that we were not agents of any kind, of the government, which they had at first suspected, they became more open in their communications than the natives generally are wont to be under the restraint which, whether for good reasons or not, the presence of strangers has of late imposed upon them. But what they chiefly dwelt upon was, the burden of the taxes since the *houries* had changed their form of government and their religion, but above all, that of the poll-tax of a dollar, to be paid in money which they had no means whatever of obtaining. In order, indeed, to pay this, they were, they said, whenever the occasion occurred, driven to make that use of their wives and daughters, which has been a fruitful source of many evil consequences from the earliest intercourse between white men and

the barbarous races. Upon the whole, their remarks tended to show that the withering effects of their contact with Europeans was chiefly to be ascribed to the too hasty strides of the government on the road to civilization, with the want of union of purpose between the civil and religious powers through which the changes are being brought about.

Before we left this village, our friends informed us, that upon either side of their bay there was a safe harbour of refuge for boats and shallops, and that that on the south side was the better sheltered of the two.

After taking leave of our semi-amphibious friends, we renewed our journey on foot, in expectation of reaching Kailua before the close of the day. On leaving the village, we found the land covered with tall plantains, forming an open grove. As we passed across this, we heard women's voices, and a great chattering and laughing, certainly not far from us; and, upon arresting our steps to discover who there might be so near, we presently perceived some six or seven of the dusky lasses of the land, issuing from the thicker portion of the grove, all dressed in their accustomed blue loose chemises, and with their heads decorated with, and their hands full of, flowers. Upon our inquiring, they informed us they had been to the higher lands in the vicinity, which abounded

in flowers in great variety, to gather sufficient to decorate their heads, as well as those of all their friends of their sex in the village. We were much amused in observing the different manner in which they severally disposed of these befitting ornaments of their persons. Some of them had merely put on the simple wreath before mentioned among the native articles of dress, and others had covered their heads with as little taste as we happen to see just now displayed in our own ball-rooms.

The country, for the remainder of the road, abounded more than any we had yet seen in this island, in the natural vegetation of the climate, and appeared to be wanting only the application of the art of agriculture, to become an abundant district. If there were but little sign of industry about the villages generally that we passed by, this neglect of labour is attributable to the ill adaptation of the land to produce the chief article and staple of life of the islanders, with the abundance of nature in the spontaneous fruits of the climate on the slips of land, and in the valleys in which the villages are seated.

This coast of Owhyhee appears to be the most healthy of any portion of the islands. Whether this be owing to the inhabitants having retained more of their ancient customs, or from its position in respect to the mountains,

and the direction of the prevailing winds which so much influence the climate in all latitudes, we found that the sickness, during the prevalence of the epidemics above mentioned, had been less here than anywhere else in the group. At Honaunaü, where the children were extremely numerous, the natives informed us that they were not aware that they had lost more than they usually buried at the same season, though several had died from one or other of the painful diseases that had prevailed. In the evening we reached Kailua.

Kailua, now the capital of Owhyhee, was the seat of the government of the group after the conquests of the renowned Kamehameha I., who, it will be remembered, died here. It is situated within a wide bay, with a safe roadstead and good anchorage. It has a very few more inhabitants than some of the larger villages in the island, though much frequented by the natives living in the vicinity, on account of its being the centre of their civil and religious affairs. It has, however, four stone buildings and a fort. The buildings are, the residence of the governor; that of the parent of the missionaries, Mr. Thurston, whom we have had already occasion to name; and two places of worship.

Immediately upon our arrival, we called to pay our respects to the governor, Kapeau, a native chief, who received us with good-humoured

frankness, and ordered a room in the government-house to be prepared for our reception and residence; in order, as he said, that we might be as near to him as possible during our stay in the place.

We were not long installed, before the hospitable chief came to pay us a visit, and, as it happened to be a bright moonlight night, he invited us to go at once in his company, to inspect the fort, which was in front of his residence, and which in passable English he called the right arm of his strength. We found it consist of a single battery commanding the bay, with twelve pieces of cannon of not very large calibre.

After this, we proceeded to examine the interior of the house still standing in the vicinity near the beach, in which Kamehameha I. breathed his last. Nothing was now, however, remaining of the building save the bare walls. It did not appear to have differed from the better sort of the native huts that we had entered since landing in the islands.

Early the next morning, we paid a visit to the Rev. Mr. Thurston, who received us with much politeness; and in the afternoon we dined, by invitation, with the same gentleman, and had the pleasure of making the acquaintance of his lady, who has been with her husband since the commencement of the mission. Mr. Thurston

is the sole survivor of the three first missionaries who, it will be remembered, arrived together from America in the month of April 1820, and the consequences of whose reception we are observing in our intercourse with the native population.

The next morning we visited Monsieur l'Abbé Maréchal, the chief of the priesthood of the Romish Church in this island. We found the Abbé living in a condition of quite anchorite severity; but we learned from him that his poverty was not a matter of choice. The troubles in France had caused derangement in the transmission of the funds for the support of the mission, which had reduced the whole Romish clergy to the necessity of living upon the benefactions of some among the poorest classes of the natives, or of those from whom it was still more humiliating to receive obligations. The Abbé informed us that there were 7000 Romanists in this island; that about 2000 of these were in the immediate vicinity of this town, and that 1200 attended his church.

The day after our interview with the missionaries, we unexpectedly met with another European gentleman, by whom we were induced to change our plans. This was Mr. Hall, who had been some time settled in the island, and engaged in raising a coffee plantation. He had ridden here from his estate

in the rear of Karakakooa bay, and intended, after his return, travelling as far as Kaihili and Whyhohino, beyond the south-west point of the island, by which route, if we accompanied him, we should be able to reach the remaining object of our curiosity — that great natural phenomenon, the volcano of Kilauea, on Mauna Loa—as well as accomplish a considerable portion of the tour of the island.

As soon as the Governor heard of our intention, he offered his boat to carry us back to Karakakooa bay, which we gladly accepted; and as Mr. Hall had already departed, we embarked, after a warm leave-taking of the native chief, upon the same day.

CHAPTER XIII.

VISIT TO A COFFEE ESTATE.

Departure from Kailua—Boat Voyage—Picturesque Views — Landing — Old Friends — Affectionate Reception — Entertainment — Singing by the Native Girls — Reflections on the Prospects of the Natives—Conversation—Renew our Journey on Foot—Meeting with the Abbé Maréchal—Horses—Precipitous Way—Mr. Hall's Estate —The Coffee Tree — The Fruit — Kamtschatka Dog— Travelling again on Foot — Fertility of the District — The Character of the Vegetation—Arrival at Karakakooa Bay.

THE boat which the Governor of the island had placed at our disposal, was furnished with schooner sails, and was manned by two of the natives. As we glided out of the bay of Kailua, a light air which had passed over the water near the shore unperceived, soon augmented to a gentle breeze; and our little craft now mounted and descended the long rolling swell of the great ocean upon which we were embarked with hardly any apparent motion, while she was making her way with the rapidity, as well as

ease, with which a vessel glides over the smooth waters of a lake or flowing stream.

Nothing could exceed the beauty of the views that the coasts of the island here presented. The picturesque cocoa-nut groves appeared at intervals along the shore, beyond which were seen fertile vales and ravines, gradually rising towards the higher country in the interior, and crowded with rich vegetation, which diminished as the elevation of the land increased, until the stern sterility terminated in the snowy summits of the two gigantic mountains of Mauna Kea and Mauna Loa.

Though we were to have the use of the Governor's boat as far as Karakakooa bay, it was our intention to land at some nearer point upon the coast, in case the weather should permit, in order to visit Mr. Hall's estate, to which my companion and myself were invited, and which we were very desirous of seeing; and towards evening we accomplished a landing in a shallow bay about a mile south of that where we had seen the feats of the surf-board during our journey on foot.

Our reception here was most interesting, and could not fail to remind us of the time when the boats of our celebrated navigators' ships cautiously approached the shores of newly discovered lands, while the natives who lined the beach stood stupefied, or as full of doubt

concerning the intention of the strangers, as the Europeans were concerning the character of the reception they might meet.

As our boat grounded within a few yards of the foremost among the crowd, and the wave that had lifted her on the beach recoiled, I jumped on shore. The natives shouted the signs of welcome that we had had no reason to believe would be wanting, and at the moment I reached the ground beyond the wash of the next sea, an old woman rushed out from among the rest, and throwing herself into my arms, gave me such an embrace as a mother might have given her son just escaped from the perils of shipwreck; while the rest of the party crowded round us, and with the happiest faces in the world asked some questions, by which we soon discovered that we were in the midst of the same good people with whom we had a day or two before sojourned, where we had been so much delighted by the spectacle of the surf-board, and afterwards so hospitably entertained, but whom we did not at first recognise. They had seen the boat pass the bay in which their village was seated; and they had, on observing her approach the land, hastened here, out of mere curiosity to see who was about to visit their shore; and, surprise and pleasure at again seeing their European friends, had caused the ecstasy of the old woman, and the joy of the whole party.

Our friends now conducted us again to the same house where we had been before entertained; and though the chief of the village was still absent, they at once set about making preparations for accommodating us for that night; after which they brought us the same luxuries of cocoa-nuts, plantains, and oranges, with which they had before regaled us, and of which we now ate heartily, amidst the same arrangements as before.

When we had finished our supper, we conversed for a short time with our friends. On the occasion of our first visit to this village, our conversation was chiefly upon subjects that regarded the relations which the inhabitants of these remote settlements bore to those of the towns, and to the governing authorities at Waohoo, concerning which the natives were very communicative. This time it was our part to entertain our hosts after the same manner they had entertained us, by giving them an account of the country properly our own. They seemed, however, from questions put to us, as the discourse proceeded, little to appreciate, if indeed they were able to comprehend, the traits and descriptions of European life which we endeavoured to give them.

After we had said as much upon these subjects as the occasion suggested, and when our discourse began to lose the interest it had

at first excited, our friends made a general demand upon us, to tell them whether there was anything they could do that would afford us pleasure. We should, certainly, if we had consulted only our wishes, have requested that some of the girls would dance; but we knew this to be *tabooed* by the missionaries, in opposition to whose influence we did not, after the manner of many of the white inhabitants of the towns, wish to set ourselves, however we might have disagreed with them concerning a part of the means they employed to accomplish their great ends. The clash of rival faiths, such as that from which infinite mischief has arisen in these islands, could hardly be more dangerous to the interests of an infant community almost founded upon a religious basis, than an example of disrespect shown on such an occasion as the present, for the advised arrangements made for accomplishing any great work. It occurred to us to ask, however, whether any one among the women could sing. Upon which five or six of the girls started up from the mats upon which they had been reclining, and commenced singing a hymn that had been taught them by the missionaries.

As these children sang, we seemed transported back to a remote and very different age of the world from that in which we live. The whole was to me as a dream. How vast is the

distance, how great, how real, the difference between men in the more advanced stages of society, and the proper children of Nature! The constrained smile or laugh of the one, amidst the greatest incitement to pleasure, often tells us how small a portion of the soul is occupied with the present, how large a portion, either with some painful passage of the past, or with the dark and doubtful future; while the other, has the full enjoyment of the present, undisturbed by any vain remembrance of the past, or any gloomy apprehensions concerning the future. Such, doubtless, was the condition of the earlier inhabitants of the earth. The golden, pastoral, or poetical age, is not a bard's dream. It was doubtless, that state of society, before men's hearts became corrupted by the phantoms that made them forget the proper end of their being, which gave rise to all the train of passions that subjected them to the necessity of laws to restrain their acts of injustice towards one another, whence arose distinct communities, and wars, anarchy and tyranny, which have in all ages of the world and in every country, diverted the energies of men from their proper course, and negatived the efforts of the best among us, for the lasting amelioration of the condition of humanity. Wherefore our arts, our knowledge, our science, if they fill us with envy, instead of affection for one another, with the love of wealth, and forget-

fulness of the sources from which it springs, the true purpose for which it was given, and to which it should be applied. Our vain expectations are never realized. The passion we indulge the most, is augmented by the very fulness with which it is gratified. What should we require more than food and raiment, and the shelter that the changes of the seasons make necessary, since this earth cannot be our home? But sleep on, ye happy children of Nature, in the same forgetfulness of the past, the same indifference to the future. Let no one disclose to you the too plain signs of the time; let no one reveal, how near is the close of your dream. Your brothers in the sister isle perish by thousands under the white man's laws, his vices, and his diseases. Your reception of the stranger, your right in the soil from which your fathers tranquilly gathered the fruits, claim a care, or merit a respect, which ye will not receive from the invader. A few short years and your race may be heard of no more. Such, at least, were the melancholy reflections which we could not suppress, during the entertainment we received.

As soon as the girls ceased to sing, some of the party retired, and we laid ourselves down among the rest, consisting of eight or ten of both sexes and all ages, and enjoyed a night of undisturbed repose.

Early on the following morning, we prepared

to part with our friends; but they insisted upon accompanying us beyond the precincts of the village, where we prepared to take the same leave of them that we were accustomed to take of all the natives with whom we sojourned. They seemed, however, at this moment, to recal what they had appeared to listen to with so much indifference on the previous evening; and they now expressed their hope, that when we were full of the engagements which we had informed them were usually those of Europeans, we would not forget our friends in this island. In reply to this, we assured them, not only that they would retain a lasting place in our memories, but that at least our particular friends among the inhabitants of the island, from which we came, should hear of the reception that we had met with in Owhyhee. Then after responding to a request they made of us, that in case we should ever again visit their island we would make a longer sojourn with them, we embraced the women and shook hands with the men, and departed.

We had now to keep the coast for two or three miles, before we began to ascend towards the plantation where we were to rejoin the friend with whom we had parted on the previous day; but before we had marched a mile, we were overtaken by the Abbé Maréchal and a lad, both on horseback. The Abbé would have

dismounted and given us his horses; but this we refused to permit, insisting that our legs were better than his; and we walked by his side, until we came to a village consisting of a few huts, at about three miles from that at which we had slept. Here the priest had comfort to offer to one of his flock; we therefore now accepted his horses to finish our journey while he was occupied with his religious duties, and the lad accompanied us on foot to bring them back.

As we proceeded, we found the way precipitous, and the priest's horses, whether from laziness or incapacity to serve us better, were the slowest we ever mounted. We arrived, however, at our destination by mid-day.

Mr. Hall had chosen a romantic and very beautiful spot for the agricultural experiments in which he was engaged, and he had already a fine coffee plantation in a forward state. The coffee tree does not bear until three years after it is planted, which renders its cultivation a speculation which requires much good management and great patience to assure success. In the West Indies, the crop very frequently fails; but in these islands, as far as the planters have yet been able to observe, it is far more certain, and will probably therefore be ultimately one of the staples of the commerce of the islands. We were regaled with a cup of coffee and watermelon on our arrival, and we found the former

to our judgment of a far better flavour than any West India coffee we had ever tasted. I have too rarely had occasion to visit coffee estates in other countries, to be able to compare the young tree here with that of the same or of any other age elsewhere. It is however a beautiful plant to look upon, and grows nearly in the form of the larch, but has a leaf of a lighter green; and the fullest grown tree on this estate did not exceed ten or twelve feet in height. The fruit very much resembles the damson in form, is about the same size, and has a substance of nearly the same consistence covering the kernel, but which, when the fruit is ripe, is of a bright red colour. It grows close to the branches or twigs, something like the cone upon the larch, and must be gathered by hand. The kernels of some we opened here, we found larger than any grown in our West India Islands.

Mr. Hall had married a native lady, and had several children. Among his domestic animals we were rather surprised to find a Kamtschatka dog. The animal, however, we learned from his owner, was of hardly any value here, and was little more susceptible of attachment than the common run of his species in his own country, of which a notice has been given in another part of these travels. His temper, indeed, was better than that of the dogs in the great peninsula, which seems to indicate the possibility of a

modification of the disposition of the species by change of climate, treatment, and food.

After inspecting this estate, we set off on foot for Karakakooa bay, accompanied by Mr. Hall. We found the country here abundantly fertile, abounding in wild vegetation in great variety, among which, whether indigenous we could not learn, there were peas, beans, carrots, and cabbages of the several kinds, in the greatest profusion.

We found also here abundance of the trees before mentioned, called in the native tongue hoia and kua. The hoia resembles very much the black birch of the northern districts of America; and the kua, the mahogany of South America. We had already seen specimens of both these woods worked into furniture at the Governor's at Kailua. There was here also another remarkably fine and very useful tree, which had not been anywhere pointed out to us before. This is called Kukia. It furnishes the islanders with the resinous clips which they burn for lamps, such as were mentioned in the account of our journey between Karakakooa bay and Kailua. This tree is a great ornament to the landscape wherever it is found. It spreads its dark green-leafed branches over a large space, and usually stands apart from the surrounding trees of inferior growth and less exuberant foliage, as if it required more room

to display its superiority over the rest of the trees of the forest. This fertile district is the same which has been mentioned, as comprising an elevated country of older formation than the coasts, and terminating in the bluff cliffs and rocks which form the bottom of Karakakooa bay, at the south side of which we arrived late in the day.

CHAPTER XIV.

BOAT VOYAGE FROM KARAKAKOOA BAY TO KAILILI.

Leaving Karakakooa Bay—Beauty of the Night—Pass the South-West Cape of the Island—Change of Weather—Trade Wind—Run for Shelter—Dangerous Position—Miniature Harbour of Refuge—Landing—Desolate Plain—Attempt to finish our Journey on Foot—Deserted Huts—Continue our Endeavours—Sufferings from Thirst—Discovery of Natives in a Cave—Depth of Human Misery—Causes—Rejoin the Boat on her Passage—Arrival at Kailili—Inspection of the Village—Its Condition.

At sun-set, the usual hour of embarking upon a coasting expedition in these islands, on account of the prevalence of land breezes during the night, we sailed from Karakakooa bay on our voyage to Kailili, in a boat of the same description as that of the Governor, and belonging to Mr. Hall. We were in hopes of doubling the south-west point of the island before day-break the next morning, and of making even a considerable advance along the southern shore of the island, before we might be

met by the trade wind, which would be against us and render the sea very rough upon that coast.

It was still calm, some time after sun-set; and as the daylight grew fainter and fainter, the stars of their several magnitudes and degrees of brilliancy appeared one after the other, until the whole hemisphere was spangled with the myriads of lights which the tropical night seldom fails to exhibit. During this time, we made use of our oars; but the night was not long established before a fresh breeze reached us, with the chilly air directly from the snow-capped mountains in the interior. The wind increased in strength as the night advanced; and we ran rapidly along the shore, which, at the distance sometimes of ten or twelve miles, we could see almost as clearly as by day, while we were able to mark at the same time the line of the distant high lands, by the absence of the lower stars, which it obscured.

We did not double the south-west point of the island until daylight, after which, the wind nearly failed us. But when we were advanced about twelve miles along the southern coast, the wind, after increasing in strength, became less favourable, and carried us out about eight miles from the land. We had, however, attained a great object in passing the cape before the trade wind came down from the east, which

during the day as is well known, knocks up such a bubble of a sea here, as to render the voyage dangerous or impossible in an open boat.

The breeze, after varying at intervals in its force, at length utterly failed us while we were still in the offing; and we had now to take to our oars, to counteract the current which could not fail to be setting against us. About nine o'clock, however, a ripple on the water gave us notice of the approach of the trade, which soon came down with such force as to remind us that our distance from the land was too great for our frail bark to support such rude squalls as are very frequent upon all the coasts of the islands at this season; we therefore steered directly for the shore. But we had scarcely put our helm up, before the wind increased to a degree that obliged us to close-reef our sails, while the sea got up so quickly as to render it necessary that we should as speedily as possible seek some asylum against its increasing violence. No one on board indeed knew anything more of the coast on this side of the Cape, than that it was formed entirely of lava and the *débris* generally proceeding from volcanoes in the interior. Hoping, however, to find some little creek or cove to serve us for a harbour of refuge during the remainder of the day, we kept our course towards the land.

The part of the shore we first came near to, was observed to be composed of black lava cliffs, against which the sea was breaking with great violence, while there was nothing to indicate the presence of inhabitants, and no signs of vegetation. We now ran along this shore, sweeping over the heavy seas under the leech of our foresail for several miles, keeping all the time scarcely three times the boat's length from the broken surges which rebounded from the rugged cliffs, but without perceiving any signs of a place of refuge. To stand off again with the wind on our side, and the sea running higher than our mast-head, was impossible. But after some time, we seemed to perceive a kind of miniature haven in the rear of some rocks, over which the sea was breaking with frightful violence. As we drew near this, we observed a narrow strait, where there seemed to be a clear passage between the breakers on either side, through which we might by good management in the conduct of the boat, perhaps yet run into smooth water. The fair prospect filled us with expectation. Our jib was now hauled up, and the leech of the mainsail loosed, that we might obtain more power over the course of our bark, the moment we should change the direction in which she was sailing. But we had no sooner luffed up, and brought the breakers on our larboard

hand under our lee, than we observed the sea to break in the mid-channel also, within seventy or eighty yards ahead of us, with the same violence as on either side. But there was now no choice: to "stay" the boat was impossible without more canvass, which she could not bear: to "wear" her, was equally so. She would in either case, have perished in the broken water under her lee. Our only chance was, that the sea, as it happens upon the bars of most harbours, after breaking twice or three times, would leave a smooth swell for a time long enough to admit of our running through it into calm water, before it again broke.

At this moment, we had occasion to feel the immense advantage that our naked companions in peril would have over us, through their amphibious habits, should the worst occur. At the approach of the breaker that would turn our little bark over and over, they might plunge into the sea, dive under the turning wave, and, appearing again beyond its influence, swim easily into smooth water, while to the white men, accustomed to swim only in a calm sea, but faint hopes would remain of saving their lives. We threw off such of our clothes however, as the most encumbered us, and prepared ourselves for the worst.

The recoil of the waves upon either side of us, now rendered the steerage very uncertain, while we were running directly upon the broken

water a-head. It was a moment of breathless expectation. Three minutes more, and our frail bark would be in safety, or bottom up, and ourselves engaged in almost a hopeless struggle with the raging element upon which we were now floating. But,

"Though the seas threaten, they are merciful."

And, as we had hoped, after we hauled up, the sea throughout the channel seemed again to cease breaking, and to leave a smooth white surface upon the swell. Upon this we gave our little craft as much helm as the breakers and the rocks under our lee allowed, and she now shot a-head with the swiftness of a bird on the wing, until she entered a basin of water, about sixty yards in breadth, and so completely locked in, that neither the wind nor the swell of the sea was able to prevent us bringing up in perfect security, without having shipped scarce a barrel of water, or experiencing any inconvenience, save a thorough wetting from the spray blown from the tops of the curling seas.

As soon as we had time to look around us at our ease, we perceived that the rocks that had been under our lee as we entered the little harbour of refuge, formed an islet of the same substance as that which composed the coast, and that there was another channel into the basin, similar to the strait by which we had entered.

After some discussion, concerning our next step, we determined to land, and in case of finding the route across the country at all practicable, to pursue our way on foot, in the hope of arriving the same evening at the place for which we were bound, leaving the natives to bring the boat round after the cessation of the trade-wind, which would doubtless be some time during the next night. We had now, however, great difficulty in getting on shore, on account of the swell which was beating against the rough lava rocks, and again in mounting the cliffs. Once, however, upon the heights, we were able calmly to survey the foaming sea without, as well as to look down in triumph upon the snug little asylum which we had so opportunely gained. We had acted with extreme imprudence in passing the south-west point of the island before the cessation of the trade-wind, upon the evening after that of our embarkation, and also, in suffering ourselves to be tempted by the continuance of the land breeze, to keep so far from the shore. Thus, we had reason to exult, that we once more trod upon the firm surface of the earth.

Upon examining the country immediately around us, we found the ground composed of lava broken up into large masses, heaped one upon another, and strewed over the land in such pandemonium disorder as far as the eye could reach, as to afford no prospect of our discovering

any sort of pathway across these sterile and dreary wastes. The very aspect, however, of the plain, this "seat of desolation," invited us by its novelty, and the charm of exploring new paths and untrodden ways, to make an attempt to carry out our preconceived plan; and, furnished with two bottles of water, a small calabash of poi and some bananas, drawn from our sea-stock, after leaving instructions with our native companions, that in case we did not return to them before night, they should leave their retreat as soon as the wind moderated and the sea admitted, and endeavour, by the use of the oar, to gain Kailili before the trade met them the next day, we set off upon our journey by land.

We first tried to make our way by the coast; but here we found the great blocks of the volcanic matter, thrown up into rude heaps that rendered the way quite impassable. From an elevated position, however, we seemed to perceive a more level track toward the interior, which induced us to attempt to make our way in that direction.

We now took a course immediately inland. Our new path was at first sufficiently easy to encourage us to proceed, but soon became very difficult. After climbing, however, over immense blocks of lava, and leaping across the clefts and cracks which divided them, for about two hours, during which time we probably did not

advance two miles, we perceived three cocoa-nut trees in the direction of the sea, which led us to hope, that if we could reach these, we should find also some inhabitants. We now therefore, determined to make every effort to accomplish this; and, although the way continued to present the same obstruction, we had not proceeded much farther before we perceived the tops of two grass huts rising above the black masses of lava that appeared near them. This stimulated us to redouble our efforts; and, after another hour's most laborious march, we came to the brink of some cliffs of lava overhanging a narrow terrace about a mile from the sea, upon which the two huts had been placed, and from the soil of which the cocoa-nut trees had sprung up.

Though we yet saw no signs of the presence of any living creature, we joyfully descended to the terrace, not in the least doubting that we should find inhabitants within the huts, and be able to replenish our already nearly exhausted stock of water at least, if we did not find the fare and hospitality we had elsewhere received. Upon entering the first hut, however, to which there was no door, we found no one, and nothing within that indicated that it had been even recently inhabited, and the same with the second. Upon this, we proceeded to search for water; but we found neither brook, well, nor reservoir

of any sort. Nevertheless, high above our heads, beneath the spreading branches of the three fresh green trees, hung abundance of cocoa-nuts, which with confidence in our ability to climb as well as the native boys, who mount the tallest trees and gather the fruit thereof whenever it is required, we thought we had now within our reach as many cocoa-nuts as would yield us milk and cream enough to restore our somewhat exhausted strength, and fit us for such further difficulties as we might yet have to encounter. After several attempts, however, we found it impossible for any one of our party to reach half the height of the lowest cocoa-nut; and we were obliged to give up our attempts, wishing only we could turn from the view of the delicious fruit, with the satisfaction of the fox, that it was worthless.

We now held a little consultation concerning the next best step we should take among several of which we had the choice; but opinions were divided regarding that which might be the most prudent, and no one was very decided respecting either. We had still about sufficient time by the day, to return to the boat, provided we could make sure of retracing the very steps we came; but this admitted of doubt. We might possibly find a better route; but should we be involved in a worse, we certainly could not reach the boat in time, which would subject us, without

a doubt, to the inconvenience of passing two days without any food whatsoever. We thought of crossing to the shore, which might not be distant above half a mile, and of making signal by fire, to the boat, as she passed by at night, to come to our aid; but although we had the means of obtaining fire, we knew not whether we should find fuel for our purpose by the shore. We could take away a few sticks from where we were, but the track might not admit of our carrying enough. We might have determined to sleep here, had the want of shelter been the greatest of our troubles; but the most serious was the lack of water; and even if we should find this, we had not sufficient food for another day. It happened, however, while we were searching about, under the impression that there must be some source at hand from which the people who had dwelt here had drawn their supply, we stumbled upon a faint track over the lava, which, wheresoever it might lead, as it seemed to lie in the direction which we wished to proceed, we determined to follow.

We now marched on famously for a few hundred yards, after which we found the track scarcely perceptible. Here, however, there was a deep crack, which seemed to divide the lava far beneath the upper stratum of blocks; while it was, at the spot where we stood, impassable. Mr. Hall, who was the best acquainted

with this description of country, now found his way through intricate passages beneath the upper blocks of lava, to a second ledge, from which he was able to make his voice heard to inform us, that he had not only discovered a narrow part of the crack where we could pass over it, but that he heard water trickling through passages in the lava beneath him, from which he had hopes that we might be able to obtain some of the thrice precious beverage of which we had so much need.

Upon this, Mr. Robertson and myself hastened to join our companion, which we were soon able to do. There were no means, however, of descending any lower, or of obtaining any of the priceless liquid that rilled such sweet music in our ears. Tantalus was not tormented with more false hopes than we suffered, from the time we jumped upon the turfed terrace where the cocoa-nut trees flourished, up to this moment. Our eyes had rested upon vessels containing the richest milk and cream, which, though half starving, we could not reach; and now our ears caught the thrice dulcet sounds of trickling water, for which our parched lips longed, but which we could not obtain. We were able to cross the crack, however, and we found our way to the surface of the earth again, by passages similar to those we had descended.

Proceeding now in the same direction as

before, we soon lost all signs of a track, after which we found the way as rude and as difficult as ever. Nevertheless, we judged it best to continue our efforts, without altering our course until we might have some special reason, through some signs we might observe, for so doing. But, presently, while we were upon the top of one of the rude heaps of volcanic matter, we perceived, at the distance of about a quarter of a mile in the direction of the sea, some living creature at least, and in motion, but which disappeared almost as soon as seen. We now called, however, with the united force of our three voices, in the hope that in case it were a man we had seen, he might hear us and soon reappear, and aid our endeavours to discover some better route across the rude plain. Seeing nothing, however, again appear, and finding no signs of a living creature, after we thought we had reached the spot where we had seemed to see something in motion, we should have doubted the evidence of our senses, had not the testimony of all our sights been the same. But we had not proceeded much further than this, when we suddenly came upon the edge of a vast block of lava, which overlooked a pit about twenty feet deep, formed by the manner in which the volcanic matter was laid, and the bottom of which was strewed with indistinguishable rubbish, which seemed to

indicate the den of beasts of prey, instead of the dwelling we had hoped to find of some of our own species. But our curiosity was now much excited, and we scrambled down from our elevation into the pit, where we found, beneath the lava upon which we had stood, a cavern leading downwards with a curve that prevented our seeing to the extremity of it. There was not a vessel, instrument, or utensil of any kind to be seen, that might have indicated the presence of any of our own kind; and we should have supposed that we had fallen upon a den of wild dogs, of which we had seen one from the distance, had it not been for the difficulty which these animals would find to subsist in such a barren district. However, we entered the cavern, though very cautiously; and we no sooner turned the curve that had obstructed our sight, than we perceived two men in their maroes, and two women scarcely more covered, seated amidst filth such as I never saw any human creatures wallowing in before, and with their countenances, which we could now plainly see, as sad as if great troubles afflicted them, while they were as silent as if they did not possess the faculty of speech. The condition of their persons was worse than that of their abode, of the women especially. Their hair was of the consistence of that of a shaggy dog, yet hung down to their waists,

while their arms and legs and bodies were covered with protuberances like enormous warts. So uncommon a scene, first filled us with surprise, then with doubts whether these strange specimens of humanity were in a condition to move our pity or our contempt, and finally with suspicions not very favourable to their characters. What could have subdued nature to such a lowness? What could have plunged men into such a depth of misery, but the terror of the avengers of some unrequited crime? We took our stations, however, in front of them, and then inquired whence they came, and how long they had been living in this condition, if, as we doubted not, they had known a better. At these words, the whole party, as if they were suddenly relieved from some terror that had possessed them at our appearance, rose up from their bed of filth, and declared their willingness to give us the fullest information we could wish concerning them. Upon this, we all came into the open air; and we now learned, that the grass huts we had seen belonged to them, that they had lived upon fish and the produce of the cocoa-nut trees we had tried to climb; but that not having the means of disposing of any portion of either of these, they had neglected to carry their poll-tax to Kailili, where the government agent resided, and that they had in consequence of this been obliged, some time since, to leave

their huts and conceal themselves from pursuit, to escape being sent to a prison and hard labour, the penalty for default of payment of this tax. It need scarcely be added, that we were at first mistaken for the tax-gatherers come to carry them to Woahoo.*

Our thirst, which had been so great before we arrived there, had seemed to leave us at the sight of objects that so wholly engrossed our minds; but, recovered from the first effects of our surprise and our suspicions, we now asked where we might find water, upon which one of the women set off with a calabash, with which she soon returned, bringing a very small quantity, and that so brackish that we were not able after all to drink more than a very little of it. No doubt, the quality of this water was chiefly the cause of the state of the bodies of these unfortunates.

Upon now inquiring concerning our way, we found that to reach Kailili that evening was impossible, and that we had the choice only of sleeping where we were, or proceeding to the beach, and making signal to the boat, as she might pass along during the night. The wind, indeed, had some time since quite gone down; and upon our consulting the natives about our means of stopping the boat, two of them pro-

* See Appendix.

posed to accompany us to the shore, from which they were certain we should be able to see, and might hail and stop her, if she should pass in the night; we therefore set off in that direction without delay.

We reached the shore before sun-set, where we had no sooner arrived than, to our great joy, we observed our boat, which the immediate cessation of the swell of the sea with the wind, had already enabled to come from her retreat, not, after all, more than three miles from where we stood. She was rowing along the shore, expecting the night breeze, and soon reached us. We had some difficulty in boarding her; but this attained, we had almost as much reason to rejoice that we were again afloat, as we had had in the morning at stepping on the solid ground. As the land breeze reached us soon after sun-set, we again made sail; and, late in the night, we hauled into the cove in which Kailili is situated, and landed before the break of day, near the hut of the government agent, at which we met the usual good reception given to strangers by the natives throughout the group.

In the morning we inspected the village of Kailili, which consisted of but three or four huts, none of which were better than those we had found abandoned during our passage of the rugged bed of volcanic matter. The country immediate to the village was also of the rudest

description, which led us to inquire why the tenants of these huts lived upon such a barren spot of earth, in place of taking up their abode upon some of the thousands of acres of good land found in many districts of the island, and only waiting the labours of man to yield abundantly all the native productions and many others, and free for the settlement of whosoever should think proper to cultivate them. But as if it were to reply the more emphatically to our reproaches, after a few spare words of course, they gave us for our breakfast, fish, very good sweet potatoes, and dry taro, with all which articles they seemed to be plentifully supplied. The truth is, that fish being the most important portion of the animal food of the islanders, and the labour of procuring it much less onerous to them than the cultivation of the ground, it rarely happens that they are persuaded to occupy even the best land at any little distance from the sea; and it will remain so, until some regular system of exchange, and a better organized state of society than they have yet known, be established among them.

CHAPTER XV.

JOURNEYS TO WHYHOHINO AND THE VOLCANO OF KILAUEA.

Departure — Horses — Native Carriers — Volcanic Plain — Elevated Plain — Course of Vegetation — Improved Country—Arrival at Whyhohino—Distressed Natives — Stormy Weather — Absence of the Missionaries — Wretched Quarters — Native Visitors — Return of the Missionaries — Our Reception at the Mission-house — House and Garden—Families—Simplicity of Manners —Detained by Bad Weather—Departure for Keiva—Horses—Guides—Inhabitants—First Indications of the Volcano—Arrival at Keiva—Continue our Journey—Beds of Lava—Bad Travelling—Arrival at the Brink of the Crater — First Impressions — Hut of Refuge — Miserable Night.

THE next stage of our journey was to Whyhohino, a missionary station. Upon making inquiry concerning the best means of proceeding on our way, we found there were two horses, and no more, in the village, both of which, however, belonged to our host, who immediately placed them at our service. There were, indeed, neither saddles nor bridles; but we had invention enough among us to contrive

tolerable substitutes for these; and, after confiding our spare baggage to two natives, to carry on their backs, we set off, two on horseback and one on foot, to ride and tie, with a fair prospect of easily accomplishing this stage of our journey before night.

Upon quitting the little settlement of Kailili, we soon found ourselves marching upon the same bed of volcanic matter which, either exposed or covered with a newly-formed soil and more or less vegetation, forms the upper stratum of the lower lands, throughout the whole of the southern and western districts of the island. The lava was here, however, more regularly laid than usual, or by time and decomposition more settled down; so that a road had been made across it, with much less labour than had been expended upon that which we travelled on foot between Karakakooa Bay and Honaunau, and easily admitted of the passage of horses. Our course was between that which would have led towards the mountains, and that which would have brought us to the eastern coasts of the island. After passing over about five miles of the volcanic matter, we reached a district evidently of older formation than any we had yet seen in this island, save that in the rear of Karakakooa Bay. It was lying at a considerable elevation above the bed of lava over which we had crossed. The path from

the lower to the upper land was rough and precipitous, and we had much difficulty after alighting, in getting our horses to the top. Arrived here, however, we found ourselves upon the step of an elevated and verdant plain, from which we had an extensive view across the waste of country we had crossed. We had also here an opportunity of making some observations upon the manner in which Nature, after the formation of a new country by volcanic matter, proceeds to the production of a fertile soil. At intervals we observed, as far as the eye could compass the view, the great bed of lava, of the country that seemed so perfectly sterile as we passed over it, now apparently laid out in small patches, exhibiting vegetation at unequal distances apart, just as the cactus, in portions of the eastern deserts, appears from high hills, or like many miniature oases designed to extend by imperceptible steps over the whole surface of the barren plain. But immediately beneath us, the miracle of nature was yet, in a more remarkable manner, apparent. The lava, it has already been remarked, is almost always broken into masses, commonly varying in size from ten to thirty feet square. What we had previously seen, where no vegetation concealed the surface, we found thrown up, either by earthquakes or some other active agents, and disposed in the utmost disorder. But here

the plain was almost as level as the surface of the water; and the lava, though in the same manner divided into blocks, was separated by cracks from a few inches to a foot in breadth, just as, upon a lesser scale, we see the surface of a bed of clay that has been suddenly dried by the action of the sun or by subterraneous heat. In all these cracks, where they did not happen to be too deep to admit of the lodgement of such matter as doubtless sweeps continually over the lower country from the verdant land above, and from the decomposed lava of the plain itself, a soil had been formed, and sufficient vegetation had sprung up, to remind us of views from an elevation of some districts of our own fertile land, where the fields lie fallow, while the hedges that divide them still retain all the verdure of summer.

We were now at the distance of sixteen miles from the dwelling of the missionaries at Whyhohino. From the time we reached this elevated plain, over which we were to continue our journey, we were exposed to a damp trade-wind; and before we had made three miles on our way, rain fell in torrents. The country continued to present a great contrast to that of the lower land; and although we saw no full-grown trees for several miles, its earlier formation was apparent from the abundance of the wild varieties of vegetation with which the ground was

covered. After this we observed larger trees set wide apart; and we passed several hamlets of only three or four huts. As our path was apparent, and there appeared no chance of a change of weather, we did not enter any of these, or stop to make any inquiries. Near Whyhohino we observed the hoia and kua trees growing in groups, but not of large dimensions. At length, about three hours before dark, we came in sight of Whyhohino, a mere widely scattered settlement about the vicinity of the dwelling of the resident missionary.

I had been furnished with a letter to the Reverend Mr. Paris, who had been residing here for some time, and was about to quit the station, as well as with another to the Reverend Mr. Kenny his successor, who was at present staying with Mr. Paris; and as soon as we perceived the missionary dwelling we stopped at the door of a hut by the side of our path, to inquire whether the reverend gentlemen were at home; upon which we found they were both away, that neither of them was expected to return until the next day, and that Mrs. Kenny alone was at the house. Upon hearing this, and considering our sad plight after four hours' exposure to pelting rain and wind, and that we were yet without our baggage, and therefore unable to make any change in our apparel, we did not think it proper to intrude upon the lady;

so, without waiting for the usual invitation, which we were surprised at not receiving from the good people of the hut at which we had stopped, we alighted to see what quarters we were likely to get, in case we should put up with them for the night. But, to our surprise, upon entering we found what we had not observed as we sat on our horses, that the hut was only half roofed, and was of course half full of water, without any dry ground save a platform of earth which had been raised at one end, with about as much labour as might have served to complete the roof. Here, however, were huddled together, two men, three or four women, and several children, who had not come to greet us at the door, in a wretched condition, without even mats or straw to lie upon, or any of the meanest article of furniture of any kind. This, at least, accounted for the men who came out neglecting to meet us with the accustomed good humour of the people, and an invitation to alight and enter. But before we went further in search of some place to lay our heads for the night, we requested them to give us some account of the causes of the wretched state in which we found them. Upon this they informed us that they were the family of a late government agent here, who had died suddenly, being in arrear in his payments of taxes collected, for which his house and effects had been

taken possession of by the legal authorities in indemnification for the debt, which had driven them to take shelter in this hovel. They informed us, however, that their own hut was empty, and open, and free for us, if we chose to occupy it; upon which we proceeded, under the guidance of two girls, to take possession of the abandoned dwelling, and were soon beneath its roof: but, as we had not a dry rag upon us, we had little prospect of being better off here than in the open air, until the men arrived with our baggage.

We were scarcely under shelter, however, before some of the men from the other hut arrived loaded with sticks, of which we were able to make a fire without delay. This comfort being secured, we sent a messenger, with a few lines written with a pencil, to petition Mrs. Kenny to be so good as to send us a morsel of bread; and we dispatched two of the girls at the same time, by the advice of the men, in search of some goats that belonged to them, and were feeding upon the hills at a distance, in order to procure a little milk. Then, after taking off our coats, we stood before the fire to dry the rest of our clothes, which were thoroughly wet even to our shirts.

While we yet stood steaming over the fire, the messenger returned from Mrs. Kenny, bringing bread and tea and sugar, and an offer of the

shelter of her house. For the present, however, we did not accept this kind invitation. In the mean time we succeeded so well in the good use we made of the fire, that in less than an hour we were as dry as when we left Kailili; and as the two girls now arrived, drenched and streaming like water nymphs, with their blue chemises tight about them, and with each a calabash of milk in her hands, we seemed to have all the luxuries, including the most gracious attendance that our imaginations could compass.

Neither had we any want of other good company. The whole of the proper tenants of the hut, taking advantage of our occupying it, came to seek the shelter from the pelting rain, which that to which they had retired did not afford; and before we had boiled our milk, all the inhabitants from the houses in the vicinity came, either attracted by curiosity, or to welcome the strangers in their settlement. Indeed, such were the effects of the novelty upon ourselves, together with Mrs. Kenny's tea, and the reflex of our good spirits upon the easier moved tempers of the natives around, that we became all so merry, that any one not knowing our real condition, and that we had only just comforts enough to fortify us against the pelting of the elements, might have mistaken the whole party for an assembly of bacchanalians.

The two natives made their appearance with

our baggage, contained in two bags, soon after dark; but as the whole contents of the bags were as wet as the clothes we had on had been when we arrived, we were kept very busy during the first hours of the night in drying these also. After this, our friends left us, and we stretched ourselves upon the ground, with our bags under our heads, and slept soundly through the night.

On our rising the next morning, we found no change in the weather, and the rain continued to fall in unremitting torrents during the whole of this day; but our two little girls, who had served us so well on the previous evening, again found their way to us, and aided us in procuring such necessaries as we required.

In the afternoon, Mr. Kenny and Mr. Paris arrived, and we received an invitation to come to them immediately; but such was still the violence of the rain falling, that we thought it better to remain for the present under such shelter as chance had thrown in our way.

The storm had nothing abated in the evening of the third day, when the two gentlemen came down themselves to insist upon our removing to their abode, which we were not able any longer to refuse. On arriving at the residence of the missionaries, we were most hospitably received by Mrs. Kenny, and assigned a dry and comfortable apartment for our peculiar use.

As this was the first of the missionary stations

that we visited, where our necessities obliged us quite to take up our residence at the mission-house, we were much interested with all we saw, and much impressed with the manner of life of our charitable hosts, and the religious tone of everything beneath their roof. Their house, with a little garden in front, was situated upon ground slightly elevated above the country inhabited by the chief portion of the flock over whose welfare they were appointed to watch, and was a model of neatness and propriety. In the garden we found growing all the ordinary vegetables peculiar to the climate, upon well-weeded beds, arranged with taste and order, and a few ornamental shrubs and kukui trees. Within the house, everything, from its furniture to the dresses of its inmates, partook of an equal air of simplicity and primitive Christian manners. Mr. Paris had lost his wife, and was left with two children, girls of about eight and ten years of age, which had rendered him unable to fulfil all the duties involved in the mission; and he was only remaining until Mr. Kenny had become sufficiently familiar with the language of the natives, to perform the offices of religion, and the other duties which his position involved.

At an early hour in the evening, before that at which the family was accustomed to retire, we were all assembled in the sitting apartment, where a short service was performed. Fervent

and unaffected prayers were offered up for the success of the mission and for the true conversion of all the natives of the islands, and all heathens and idolaters, but also, especially for the welfare of the three stranger guests, and for their protection during the travels in which they were engaged. After this, a chapter in the Bible was read. Then one of the reverend gentlemen entered upon a familiar discourse upon the texts it contained, and the moral to be drawn from these in common with the rest of the sacred Scriptures, and the service was concluded with a hymn.

The whole of the day after our removal at the hospitable domicile of the missionaries, we were confined by the continuance of the tempestuous weather. After a frugal meal in the morning, we had prayers, a chapter in the Bible, and a hymn as in the evening; and at dinner we had a long prayer or grace before, and thanksgiving after, a modest repast; and again in the evening the same service as before. The meals of the missionaries are confined to breakfast and dinner.

When we arose upon the morning of the third day of our sojourn with our benevolent friends, we found the storm sufficiently abated to give us hopes of proceeding on our journey before the close of that day. Mr. Hall having found means to transact the business which brought him to Whyhohino, now returned with the horses to

Kailili; and Mr. Robertson and myself gladly accepted the offer of the reverend gentlemen to endeavour to find us fresh beasts, accustomed to the rough country that was before us. We had still more than a day's journey to perform before we could reach the great remaining object of our curiosity in the island; after which we had to descend the opposite side of the mountain as far as Hilo, another missionary station in Byron's bay, where we trusted we should be able to procure a shallop to enable us to complete our tour of this island.

By mid-day the rain had ceased; and, early in the afternoon, our horses were ready, with such rough substitutes, again, for saddles and bridles as we were able to procure. Our immediate object was to arrive that night at a village called Keiva, as yet a day's journey from the crater of the volcano, and to a particular inhabitant of which Mr. Paris furnished us with a letter. And now, after taking an affectionate leave of the two sincerely pious families that had so hospitably entertained us during the storm, we once more renewed our journey on horseback, accompanied by two native guides on foot.

The first part of our route, after leaving Whyhohino, lay near the southern shore of the island. We here passed through two villages, consisting of scattered huts, where men,

women, and children, came scampering from all directions to greet and welcome us. Several of them endeavoured to persuade us to alight and accept such hospitality as they had to offer; but we were too anxious to reach Keiva early enough to make our arrangements for the next day, to afford ourselves the satisfaction of remaining among them. Our friends at Whyhohino had assured us that we could there alone expect to find such articles of provisions as we might require for the rest of our journey.

Shortly after this, we took a more direct course towards the mountains. After now passing one or two isolated huts, our progress was somewhat obstructed by rougher ground, and by strong rapids and deep ravines. This district is called by the natives, the country of the guelches.

As the daylight began to diminish, we perceived a faint light in the eastern sky, which was the first indication of our being within the distance to which the light of the burning mountain extends. As the darkness increased, the light assumed the appearance of the aurora borealis, when that mysterious light is steadily fixed in the heavens. But from the brow of a hill we attained after the night was confirmed, while yet at the distance of twenty miles from the volcano, the light appeared like that of a vast forest in flames; while high above the

crater floated vapours which reflected the light of the volcanic fires, and gave fearful evidence of the terrible natural objects that lay beneath them.

We reached Keiva early in the night; and, although we were a little disappointed to find it consisted of but two huts, and that that of the family to whom we carried the letter was a very small one, and afforded nothing we required save the shelter of its roof, our new friends did not suffer us to lie down, until they had procured from their neighbour all we needed, both for ourselves and our horses for the night, including, even, some warmer clothing than we had brought with us, which the more elevated ground we had already attained rendered necessary.

The next morning we recommenced our journey, better supplied with provisions than we expected, and with the full hope that before the close of the day we should arrive at the brink of the crater of the volcano we had been at so much pains to visit. From Keiva we took a still more inland course than that which we had travelled on the preceding day. We now found the way very bad. Sometimes we were crossing rough land, partially covered with vegetation, which served only to render the way more difficult and more dangerous for our horses, by concealing many cracks and clefts which nothing but the

practised instinct of beasts well accustomed to the country could have avoided falling into, and as often we were clambering precipitous tracks.

The position of the beds of lava, and the condition in which they remain in this island, are incomprehensible, or require more extensive observations than we were able to make, to explain. The volcanic matter upon the upper country, sometimes broken up by the earthquakes or other agents, and sometimes lying in vast terraces or elevated plains, is all evidently of the latest formation. Upon the lands immediately below this, the condition of the soil and the vegetation is everywhere more forward; while beneath these again, along the greater part of the western and southern coasts, as we have lately seen, appear those immense beds of lava, on many parts of which not an indication of vegetation or of decomposition has yet appeared.

We stopped but once during this day, that we might give our beasts an hour's rest, and partake of some refreshment ourselves. After this, we renewed our journey with fresh vigour, and a fair prospect of attaining the object of our toils before it became too dark to discern our way. We found but little further change in the face of the country as we proceeded; and all the indications we yet perceived by day, of the great natural wonder we were approaching, was a broad column of white vapour rising from the

mouth of the crater, and lying in strata at different altitudes above the summit of the mountain.

At length the sun set, and the ascending vapours began again to exhibit the same appearance we had observed on the previous night. With the decrease of the daylight, the stars afforded us light enough to continue our way; and, about an hour after the commencement of this night, we reached the brink of the crater of the great volcano of Kilauea.

Nothing perhaps could present a grander, nothing certainly a more novel spectacle, even to the eye of the traveller to whom the most striking phenomena of Nature might be familiar, than the prospect which, amidst the darkness around us, came thus suddenly under our view. A vast abyss was before us, too wide to admit of our perceiving the side opposed to that where we stood, and too deep to admit of our seeing anything within the dread gulf, by the brink of which we stood, save an active portion of the ever-burning fires, which, by daily or hourly changing their form, add always additional interest in the eye of the spectator, in proportion to their variation from that which other visitors have witnessed and described.

While we stood in this position, the lava was seen issuing from a dark cone which seemed placed in the middle of the pit, and was running down in a vast stream of liquid fire, into a bed

of luminous vapours, from which scarce light enough proceeded to exhibit more than the livid countenances which the travellers presented to one another.

Nothing could better have illustrated the passage in our great epic poem—

"A dismal situation waste and wild;
A dungeon horrible on all sides round.
And one great furnace flam'd; yet from those flames
No light, but rather darkness visible."

After this first sight of the great natural wonder, and chief object of our journey, we turned from the north-west side of the crater at which we had arrived, towards the eastern, to search for a hut that our guides informed us Mr. Pitman, a gentleman dwelling at Hilo, had charitably erected for the accommodation of travellers benighted during their passage of the mountains.

We found as we advanced, many crevices and clefts in the ground, from which were issuing dense and hot vapours. The heat, however, which proceeded from the same sources, was agreeable to us; for we were now suffering from the cold incident to the altitude we had attained, augmented by a strong current of air accompanied by a damp mist, which was rushing towards the crater, as if designed to supply the place of the air consumed by the active volcanic matter within.

We had no difficulty in discovering the hut, which, as we approached it, appeared completely enveloped in the vapours that were issuing from the clefts in the ground in all directions. Upon coming to the door, however, we were surprised to find it strongly padlocked. Locks of any kind, to the honour of the islanders, are at this time, whatever they were at the epoch of the discovery of the group, so little needed, that nothing was further from our thoughts than to find ourselves excluded from the shelter prepared expressly for travellers like ourselves. But we heard from our guides, that no one ever approached the crater by the route we came, save occasionally one of the missionaries of the district, who, having nothing to detain him, contrived generally to reach an inhabited hut on the descent to Hilo, from which all the visitors came who were likely to be detained during night in the mountain. Thus we had no choice between sleeping under the lee of some scanty bushes that were in the vicinity, or breaking the lock and taking violent possession of the desired asylum. One might suppose the question was not difficult to determine. But it must be remarked, that if the burglary should not happen to give great offence to the owner of the hut, it was certain that it would give to our semi-barbarous companions a very bad example of respect for the rights of

property,—at all times, among the more difficult of the essential laws of civilised man to make men in the earlier stages of society comprehend. We had our particular interests, also, to consult. Should the principal European at Hilo, the owner of the hut, from whom we were counting upon a friendly reception, hear of the offence from our own mouths at our first interview, and we could not contemplate concealing it, we might find ourselves in a very unenviable predicament. While we were full of these doubts, however, the cold mist was changing into rain, which soon came down with such fury as to subject all reason to the circumstances of the time, and to determine us to break open the hut and put off all inconvenient reflections concerning its consequences until the morrow. But we found this not quite so easy to accomplish as we had expected. No instrument that we had, proved strong enough to draw the staples to which the lock was attached from their hold upon the portals of the door; and we were obliged, in order to effect our object, even to tear down a portion of the grass walls, through which we now entered.

We found nothing within the hut, save, indeed, the inappreciable comfort of shelter from the pelting rain and the wind. But we set our guides to gather sticks, of which they procured sufficient to enable us to kindle a fire, dry our-

selves, boil water, and cook some taro, upon which we supped, quite regardless of any little inconvenience arising from the want of a chimney to our habitation. After this, we stretched ourselves upon the driest spot of ground we could find, to repair our somewhat exhausted strength, and prepare ourselves for the descent of the crater of the volcano, as early as possible the next day.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE VOLCANO OF KILAUEA.

Sunrise—Magnificent Spectacle—Aspect of the Volcano—Dimensions of the Crater—An Unfaithful Guide—Superstitions—The Goddess Pelee—Observations at the Brink of the Crater—Descent of the Crater—Aspect of the Interior—Of what Composed—Lake of Liquid Fire—Our Impressions—Illusive Spectacle—Effects of the Liquid Fire—High Cones—Attempt to reach one of the Cones—Frightful Objects around—Threatened Eruption—Dangerous Position—Narrow Escape—Conjectures concerning the Composition of the Mountains—Altitude of the Mountains—Frequent Earthquakes.

THE cold was too severe, during the night we passed at the brink of the crater of the volcano, to admit of the most weary among us sleeping very soundly; and we rose from our damp beds long before it was day, and, after again boiling some water, breakfasted upon tea and dried taro.

When we appeared in front of our storm-beaten habitation, the rain had ceased, and the day was just breaking. Dense vapours were

still issuing from many fissures around us, which a gentle air directed towards the mouth of the crater, where they seemed to disperse or fall in soft showers, as they mingled with the more rarified atmosphere. But the sky above our heads was as clear, and as full of its mysterious lights, as it is wont to be in these latitudes, at all seasons and at every altitude, between the intervals of tempestuous weather.

Long before the sun's direct rays touched the land, at the elevation at which we stood, they fell upon the snow-capped summits of Mauna Loa and Mauna Kea, which seemed rising by some magic power from the abyss of floating vapours which still concealed all the lower country from our view. Far above all other manifestations of the power and beneficence of the Creator which we behold, is the spectacle of the rising sun, when his earliest beams fall upon any of the grander objects of interest which compose the material world. Placed beyond the reach of whatever might distract our thoughts, or draw away our attention from the scene we then contemplate, our souls become entranced by the objects upon which our eyes rest, and we seem to see Nature awaking from her healthful slumber, and preparing to welcome the glad image of her great Author throughout the wide expanse of her material realm. While we regarded the splen-

did scene now before us, the peaks, hills, forests, and deep ravines, successively caught the beams of the still unseen orb, until his direct ray fell upon the floating mists around us, and fully established the day.

From the hut in which we had found shelter for the night, to the brink of the crater, was but a few steps. When we were so placed as to take a survey of the great gulf by day, there was no liquid fire issuing from the cone, from which it had been streaming on the previous evening. No smoke, I believe, at any time, ascends from the volcano; and there was now nothing to intercept the view, even of the opposite country, save a thin vapour ascending from the great abyss, which, at an altitude not much above that at which we were placed, became a silvery cloud, and hung suspended over a portion of the pit where the volcanic matter, in a state of ebullition, appeared.

It seemed as if nothing could exceed the frightful desolation which the abyss exhibited—a rude plain of black and pink-coloured lava, great rocky substances thrown up into hills of no mean dimensions, two high black cones, and around these a lake of liquid fire, which appeared ready to overflow the cool beds that formed the more even portion of the lava plain.

The crater is of an oval form, and, by the latest actual surveys, three miles and a half

in length, and two miles and a half in breadth, making a circumference of about nine miles. Its height, above the level of the sea, is about 6000 feet.

Our object was now to descend to the bed or plain of lava called the black ledge; and, by crossing this, to approach the great lake of fire, in order to examine, as closely as possible, the more remarkable features of the frightful gulf. But if the active and ever-changing portion of its contents were, at this time, in the centre of the pit, as it has usually been found, we had probably near two miles to traverse upon this set bed of lava before we could reach the chief object of our curiosity; for it was certain we were at one of the more remote points of the figure formed by the crater.

We were now each furnished with a staff of six or seven feet in length, cut from some stunted trees in the vicinity; and we prepared to descend. But at the moment we were about to leap from the edge of the crater to the first step on our way, we found we were only to be accompanied by one of the guides, and, upon inquiring the cause of this, we were surprised to find that the other had refused to descend with us, on account of his fears, not of the fires, but of the deity of the volcano. Though nominally a Christian, his early impressions were not yet effaced from his mind concerning the goddess

Pelee, who made this volcano the seat of her empire, the gross superstition with which her worship was accompanied, and the terror with which this, her turbulent temple, was invested.

This Pelee is the second of the two deities of the islands which were thought worthy of being especially named in a former chapter, on account of their connexion with events or objects which the course of these travels would lead us to be particular in noticing. Of all the deities with which the ancient religion of the islanders abounded, Pelee seems to have been the most terrible in her attributes, and the most demoniacal in her acts. The priests, with the same facility as those of ancient Europe, and of so large a portion of modern Asia, in order to build up their system and give individuality to the monstrous creations with which their dread hierarchy abounded, had personified the moral attributes of men, both good and evil, and the most striking natural phenomena. Thus the goddess, seated amidst the turmoil of this volcano, was in her material nature composed of fire, while her moral attributes were cruelty and hatred of men. She reigned over a tribe of worthies, all of whom were demons and agents, who directed the natural causes of terror; and they received severally the appellations that were most in accordance with the acts they were supposed to perform, such as the god of the

thunder, of the rain, of fires, of vapours, and many others. They all dwelt amidst these fires, whence they issued only to torment or destroy those who came within their influence, unless the sovereign goddess had been previously appeased by large offerings of hogs and fruit, which served to fatten the priests who dwelt in the neighbouring *heiaus*: we could not, therefore, be surprised, that wherever any particle of such superstitions as these still remained, they should have some portion of their former influence upon those uninstructed men. Even our Christian, or more sensible or charitable guide, though he condemned the cause of this departure of his companion from the straight path of duty which his engagement with us enjoined, we could not help thinking, from the manner in which he spoke and regarded the abyss beneath us, was not quite free from similar terrors himself. Upon our inquiring, however, whether he had descended into the crater before, without which it was not probable he could be of much, if of any use, he informed us that he had descended with one of the missionaries some time since, and that upon that occasion, and not before, he had become convinced of the error of his former impressions. Still it is probable that his speech was at variance with his feelings, and that he was an instance of the strange inconsistencies which accompany

all extravagant superstitions; for when we endeavoured to turn into ridicule the absurdities which accompanied the faith in the precious deity of the volcano, he appeared far from disposed to unite with us in our merriment, while our unfaithful guide, with the same want of consistency, laughed as heartily at what we said, as if he had never been under the spell which still withheld him from approaching any nearer to the goddess's fearful throne.

Before, however, we attempted the descent, we made a little tour of observation about the banks of the crater, where we had the opportunity of gathering up some of a curious material known by the name of "Pelee's hair," for which it formerly passed. This is a fibrous substance, resembling the threads of flax when gathered green and rubbed and pressed, but is almost as brittle as glass. It is found adhering to the bushes, in the same manner as any light fibrous matter caught sweeping before the gale. All who have visited the volcano have noticed this curious substance; but I do not know whether it is considered to proceed from the streaming fissures found everywhere around, or, as is more probable, from the crater itself. On the side of the mountain by which we had approached after dark, we now found it covering the bushes in many places like cobwebs.

The depth at which the black ledge or en-

circling portion of set lava lay in the volcano at this particular time, according to observations made since the last changes, compared with the latest actual surveys, was about eight hundred feet, and the volcanic matter had been so long at that depth, or lower, that the guide who was to accompany us believed we should have no difficulty in finding the same way by which he had before descended.

Our path for the first three or four hundred feet, though steep and difficult, lay amidst beds of ferns and wild shrubs, very plainly indicating that a long time had elapsed since the sinking of the volcanic matter beneath that point. After this the way was more rugged, and lay across rudely placed blocks of lava; so that it was about half an hour from the time we commenced our descent, before we reached the set ledge of matter that rests upon the ever-burning element beneath it. We had now a hundred or two yards of a smoother and more gradual descent, evidently caused by the volcanic matter as it settled down after it cooled, leaving that portion of its crust resting against the more solid banks.

Arrived at the even ledge, we directed our course rather by our memories of the aspect of the interior of the crater from the heights above, and by the aid of a compass we carried in our hands, than under the guidance of our native. We made our way with the help of our staves

tolerably well for a quarter of a mile, when our direct course was obstructed by hideous heaps of basaltic blocks, hove up by some mighty effort after the existing plain had been formed, covering a space of about two hundred yards long and nearly as many broad, and rising to the height of three or four hundred feet above the ledge upon which we were walking. After turning from this, towards the left hand, we found our way made so difficult by the manner in which the blocks of lava were heaped up, that in seeking for a better, we approached the banks of the crater of this side, which we perceived at a particular spot were formed by immense deposits of pure sulphur. After this, the plain became more even; and we now directed our course towards what seemed the centre of the great gulf, near which appeared the cones above mentioned. We next passed by several deep cavities, which seemed formed by partial sinkings of the volcanic matter after the cooling of the last settled crust. At length, after about two hours' march across this difficult way, our further progress was arrested by the great lake of liquid fire, from the midst of which rose the two remarkable cones, apparently as firmly established as if a base of adamant were beneath them.

Arrived here, we stood and looked about us in breathless excitement, not under the apprehension of danger, but moved by the grandeur

and character of the natural objects around. The boiling lake of fire beneath us, from which jets of the liquid element were thrown at intervals, like small fountains in a vast basin, the oozing of hot and hissing vapours from many fissures in the fixed bed of lava on which we trod, the mighty cones which rose from the fiery gulf, the isolation of our position, the desolation of the plain, all combined to impress us with sensations we could not communicate to one another. That which took the strongest hold of my mind at this time was, the great contrast between that upper stratum of the firm earth from which the sun draws up wholesome vapours that descend in fertilizing showers, and the terrible abyss of the modern geologists, which seemed now half open to our view—the region of chaos and perpetual night—the condition, doubtless, at one time, of the upper stratum as well as of the interior of our globe, save the presence of light and those directing and modifying powers which led to the incrustation that preceded vegetation, and before the earliest forms of organised nature found the means of perpetuating their species.

As we stood by the bank above the burning lake, with each his staff in the right hand, with one end resting upon the cool lava beneath our feet, we doubtless formed such a picturesque group, as to an enthusiastic fancy might have

seemed three of the infernal peers just escaped from the fiery gulf in which the rebel hosts of Satan lay vanquished, after vain war waged for the supremacy of their bold leader.

The appearance of the inner walls of the cliffs of the crater within, were not the least remarkable of the objects under our view. It was impossible to tell our exact distance from any given point; but if we were, as we supposed, near the centre of the crater, we were nearly two miles from the solid ground in some directions. There was nothing anywhere resembling the regular strata of any geological series. In some parts, mighty patches of calcareous, and sulphureous earths appeared at irregular intervals. But on the side of the south, from which we were perhaps the furthest, as if the views of the real objects of wonder upon which we gazed were not sufficient to compensate our labours, an illusive spectacle of extraordinary character now excited in us a new interest. Here we seemed to see a country extending from the termination of the lava plain to an immense distance, comprising hills and vales, and even cities and villages, and flocks of sheep which appeared grazing in great numbers upon the sides of the hills and the vales.

After we had dwelt for some time with exultation upon all the remarkable objects under view from the site on which we had planted ourselves, we determined to reach, if it might

be possible, the very Stygian pool itself; and after descending, by our estimation, about a hundred feet beneath the black ledge, through fissures and over steps formed by terraces along the lava cliffs, we effected our purpose: and we now stood by some small pools of the liquid element, which were separated from the unbroken flood of fire, without experiencing any other inconvenience than such as proceeded from a good scorching, while we dipped the ends of our poles into the live lava to assure ourselves of the reality of the quick consuming powers which we had heard it possessed. Nothing could be more true. The fire that did not emit heat enough to prevent our approach, after only covering our faces, to its very edge, reduced the portions of the green wood that touched it, to ashes in a moment.

But the objects of the greatest interest, among the realities about us on all sides, were the two dark and high cones, which stood amidst the turmoil around them like impregnable fortresses in the infernal empire, or like supports for the steps of the prince of darkness to stand a second time and call up his legions, lying "outstretched upon the burning marl." That to which we were nearest, seemed to be the same from which we saw the stream of lava issuing on the previous evening.

After returning to the black ledge, we were resolved, if it were possible, to approach some-

what nearer to one, at least, of the great cones, in order to ascertain whether they were composed of the basaltic blocks of lava, or of such scoriaceous *débris* as form the cone of Vesuvius; and we determined to attempt the tour of the lake in search of some means of effecting our purpose. We now directed our steps towards the south, and, with each his staff in his right hand, recommenced our formal march. We had not, however, proceeded far, before we perceived that one of the cones was connected with the firm lava upon which we were walking by a kind of bridge, or broad inclined causeway across the gulf out of which the huge towers rose. On seeing this, we determined to make the nearest possible approach to this cone. Our native guide, indeed, when our resolution was communicated to him, thinking we designed to peep into the cone itself, whether from superstitious or more rational motives of dread, was full of alarm, and began to remonstrate with us most eloquently. But, upon hearing that we only wished to get a little nearer to the object of our curiosity, he consented to accompany us.

One might suppose, that what we had seen on the previous evening had been a sufficient warning to suggest great caution at least, in our movements about this part in particular of the

great crater; but the firmness with which everything appeared to be set, save the bubbling lava beneath, inspired us with confidence, and put out of our minds all ideas of present danger. Thus we commenced our passage of the causeway, ascending towards the great cone, with almost as much assurance as we should have trod upon a path of granite between two solid hills. The lava here, was not so much cracked or broken up as we had observed the volcanic matter elsewhere, and the colour of its surface was such as we had nowhere before observed; —generally a pale greenish white, from which, had the substance not been perfectly cool, we might have concluded that it was composed of the matter that we saw streaming from the cone the preceding night. It was more probable, however, that it had been sometime set, and that that which we had seen issuing from the cone had fallen into the fiery lake below. In many places, which we had also nowhere else observed, the firmer set blocks of lava were covered over with matter of a fibrous and brittle texture, an inch or two in thickness, with a space between it and the more solid substance, from one to five feet in depth. But this we did not discover until one of the party fell cracking through the brittle matter, upon the more solid bed beneath. Upon this, we used our

staves, after the manner of travellers who try the ice on doubtful spots, by which we at least escaped any similar accident of moment.

When we had reached about half way across the horrid gulf, we halted for a moment, once more calmly to contemplate the terrible objects around. Beneath us, at a great depth, boiled the fiery pool; above us appeared the huge conduit of the unchained fires from within the earth; and, on all sides, a gloomy region of frightful desolation. Such feelings possessed me, at this particular time, as the contemplation of the grander objects of nature seldom fails to inspire, alternately partaking of elevation and of depression. Whenever we regard what is at the same time grand and uncommon, we almost seem to hold intelligible intercourse with some invisible agent of the Author of all we behold. Then, as if conscious of having soared to an altitude of thought beyond the powers of humanity to maintain, we are suddenly struck with a sense of our insignificance, the shortness of our existence, the temporary nature of all we may acquire, and of the worthlessness of all our pursuits that have not a direct moral object.

The condition of three creeping things on their insecure way across this fiery pool, might not be unlike that of the proudest among us seen at a sufficient altitude by some immortal,

who beheld, as it were yesterday, the formation of the crust upon the globe upon which we walk over the fires beneath us, as unconscious of their presence, as a child of the dangers inseparable from every step that it must by and by take in the moral world. Whatever might have been, at this moment, the precise thoughts of my companion and our semi-civilized guide, every idea of danger seemed put out of all our minds by the engrossing character of the scene, and the reflections of one sort or other which, no doubt, equally possessed us; and we now renewed our efforts, determined, at least, to pursue the adventure till our way was arrested by some more formidable obstacle than we had yet encountered.

We had, not, however, been climbing many minutes after the reverie in which we had indulged, when our purpose was suddenly arrested by a fearful warning that some change was about to take place in the elements around us. No sounds I ever heard before could be compared to the unearthly noises that now pierced our ears, accompanied by the shaking of the infirm bed of lava that was beneath our feet, Had the fires of the infernal regions been about to expire, and the elements combined to restore their heat, the rush of the hellish blast, and the re-kindling of the flames, could scarcely have produced more frightful sounds than those that

issued from the mouth of the cone above us. For an instant we remained transfixed to the spot on which we stood, not knowing where to seek security from the dangers that threatened to overwhelm us. But, recovered from our momentary stupor, we commenced our retreat, descending with steps as rapid as the rude character of the way would permit, towards the lava plain we had left. But, before we had made many paces, the sounds that had first struck our ears, like mighty blasts, turned to the smart cracking of near thunder, while immense masses of red-hot lava began to fly from the mouth of the cone to a great height into the air, scarcely leaving any doubt that a current of lava was about to stream down the sides of the cone into the gulf beneath.

But the most immediate danger to which we became exposed, was that of being crushed by the falling blocks of lava that issued from the cone. The greater part of these were at first observed to fall into the crater from which they proceeded; but, while we were still upon the infirm bridge we had attempted to cross, they began to fall beyond the cone. Some now tumbled into the gulf on either side of us, while others, after striking the sides of the cone, fell into the pool, or rolled by us with the impetuosity of falling matter down a steep way, crushing with horrible turmoil every obstruction

to their course. Several even fell perpendicularly upon our frail bridge, and breaking through the stratum of volcanic element which composed it, were lost in the profound beneath.

For many minutes we were thus exposed to the danger of being crushed to atoms, amidst the wild uproar and confusion that surrounded us. We finally, however, reached the firm ledge of the longer set element, unscathed. And while we recrossed the plain, with somewhat quicker step than we had approached the seat of danger, the great cone, instead of making good its threats to vomit fresh streams of lava, resumed the tranquil state in which it seemed to repose before our adventure.

The two gigantic mountains which chiefly form this island, are doubtless vast globes of fire, encrusted with thicker or thinner strata of the various substances which have at different periods issued from many volcanoes. The eruptions which formed their summits, appear to have happened at a time too remote to have left more than vague traditions concerning them. But there are found many craters, similarly placed in relation to the figure of the mountain, to that into which we have just descended. The volcanoes of the greater part of these appear to be entirely extinct, while others, at intervals, still vomit their destructive elements, which have not, however, during any

of their later eruptions reached the lower, or inhabited lands, and not always even the forest region.

The highest point of Mauna Loa, according to the latest scientific observations, is 14,000 feet above the level of the sea. Upon its broad summit, there are no less than four ancient craters, from which streams of vapour alone issue at present, through some fissures in the lava beds. The depth of the largest averages 600 feet. The temperature of the atmosphere upon these mountains varies during the twenty-four hours from 17° to 50° Fahrenheit. Mauna Kea, has been less subjected to scientific observations, on account doubtless of its having no volcano in active operation like that of Kilauea. Nevertheless its sides abound in extinct volcanoes, or such as break into eruption only at long intervals of time. It has more snow on it, reaching generally to a lower altitude than that on the sister mountain, which is doubtless owing to its having less internal heat, or a thicker stratum of the volcanic matter, of which it is equally composed with the other. Its height is about 200 feet above that of Mauna Loa.

Violent earthquakes are of frequent occurrence around both these mountains, and also throughout this island; and the same, indeed, though with less violence, in all the islands

belonging to the group, which, combined with what we have seen, afford tolerably plain evidence, as well of the elements of which the mountains are composed, as of the unsubstantial foundation upon which the islands themselves rest.

CHAPTER XVII.

JOURNEY FROM THE VOLCANO TO HILO.

Departure from the Volcano—Condition of the Way—Lava Beds—Arrival at Konakoa—Good Fare—Pass the Night—Condition of our Beasts—Determine to repose a Day—Composition of the Soil and the Country—Curious Efforts of Nature—Early Productions—Birds—Oo, the most precious of the Island Birds—Departure for Hilo—Jaded state of our Beasts—Meadow Lands—Cattle—Arrival at Hilo.

Upon our return to the upper regions, after our adventure in the infernal pool, we had still four hours of daylight left; we therefore made our little arrangements as speedily as possible: and, mounting our beasts again, which, under the care of the less faithful of our two guides, had fared but indifferently during our absence upon such wild herbage as the mountain afforded, we renewed our journey.

Our immediate object was to gain a half-way station between the great crater and the settlement of Hilo, called Konakoa, if possible, before dark. Our guides informed us, that we should

here find another asylum, erected by the same gentleman whose locks and keys we had not respected, and an inhabitant in charge, from whom we should be able to obtain lawful permission to enter.

For the first hour, we found the descent very gradual, over ground formed of the constant lava, sometimes reduced to a soil producing scanty vegetation, but often broken up and thrown into the same disorder, in which some of the rudest beds of the volcanic substance were lying upon the opposite side of the mountain. By picking the way, however, a path had been formed which our guides found no difficulty in following, though the condition of our horses, after their sufferings during the last night, was not such as to enable us to make very rapid progress.

After we had accomplished about a third of the distance, we found great improvement in the country, both in respect to its soil and its productions; and, the character of the way became now such as to enable us to increase our speed. But by the time we had made about two-thirds of the distance, our path became again very rough, and the more dangerous, on account of the wide cracks in the set bed of lava, which the vegetation often concealed from our horses as well as ourselves. On one of the precipitous descents, the horse of my companion fell, throwing his rider so far from him as to cause some apprehensions.

Nothing serious, however, followed, and we renewed our efforts. But we were now overtaken by the night, and heavy rain, which obliged us to dismount and grope our way with poles, to prevent the horses falling into the cracks, or stumbling over the rugged masses of lava that were lying in their way.

At length we reached Konakoa, without having met with any serious accident, but once more wet to the skin. We found here, besides the house of refuge, several other small huts, in one of which resided the family in charge of that erected for the accommodation of travellers. It appeared that many officers of men-of-war and of whale-ships which put into Byron's bay visit the volcano, which had induced Mr. Pitman to erect an asylum here, to serve the same purpose as that we had the last night occupied; and this had led to the settlement of several natives, who, if they got a dollar or two from travellers in the course of the year, were contented to abandon superior spots of ground, for the means this afforded them of paying the onerous poll-tax.

Having gained lawful admittance to this house of refuge, we lighted a fire in the chimneyless abode, and dried our clothes. After this, some women brought us sweet potatoes and bananas, upon which we made a hearty supper. Then, as the night was now well advanced, we laid down upon an inclined plane occupying half

the area of the hut, and similarly placed to that upon which soldiers lie in a guard-house, and enjoyed such a night's rest as well repaid us for the loss of the last.

In the morning we found our horses suffering so much from sore feet, occasioned by the roughness of the way, that it seemed very doubtful whether they could perform the rest of the journey without twenty-four hours' rest; we therefore determined to remain here until the next day, and to occupy ourselves in making some observation, if it were possible, of the surrounding country: thus, after we had made a good breakfast of the same delicious fruits upon which we had supped, we set off on foot for this purpose. We were not, however, very successful in our researches; for our progress was arrested in every direction in which we attempted to turn our steps, by the unevenness of the ground, which kept us clambering over heaped-up blocks of lava, and jumping across the interstices between other more regularly disposed masses, without affording us an equivalent for the fatigue we suffered. We were interested, however, in comparing the marked difference in the manner by which Nature was here and in other places we had visited, converting these shapeless and sterile elements from her "nethermost abyss," into productive and fruitful soils.

The way in which the mould appeared to be

forming by the deposit of the perishing vegetation proceeding from the higher or older lands, and gathering in the interstices, and about the ridges upon the otherwise level surface of the lava, has been above noticed; but, since we passed the mountain, we had observed, that the rudest country about us was covered with vegetation, from the stunted and coarser herbs of the climate, even up to shrubs almost arrived at the dignity of trees: and we had now the opportunity of observing in what manner these grew, and of conjecturing the cause of their early appearance, and the part assigned them in the miraculous transformation of the most sterile substances into the most fertile soils. We found all this vegetation growing upon the flat surface of the blocks of lava wherever these were not almost perpendicular, in a greater or smaller quantity, in proportion to the approach of the surface of the lava to a level; and, when we examined the roots of the several plants or shrubs, we found them attached to the lava, without penetrating it, just as the branches of our creeping-plants cling to a brick wall. Thus far, at least, our actual observation extended; from which we concluded, that the early beginning and rapid progress of vegetation upon this side the mountain, proceeded from the trade-wind blowing here continually from the sea. This, doubtless, brought moisture that was absorbed by the lava,

which it served to honeycomb before time had been able to reduce the rude masses to a level fit for more advanced vegetation. Moreover, as we extended our observations, we found the herbs that were flourishing in many places gradually crumbling the masses of lava into mould, which their decaying matter enriched as it formed. Certain spots indeed, of which advantage had been taken by the inhabitants here, were in a condition to admit of the cultivation of the sweet potatoe and the banana, of which we had already partaken, and found the latter superior to any we had before tasted.

But although we were arrested in our attempt to examine much the country in the vicinity of this incipient village, we had the gratification of making acquaintance for the first time, with some of the spare number of the winged tribes of the island. Any one who has happened to sojourn at any time in the solitary forests which the hand of man has not yet subdued, will not forget some moments at which the dead silence has been broken by the note, perhaps, of the least harmonious of any of the winged species. So rare are the birds in these islands, that when we here found ourselves greeted by their songs, we remembered our former sensations; for we had both known the solitude of the virgin forests of North America; and we received the same impressions that we had often there experienced.

In those ancient forests, however, the axe of the woodman precedes the actual establishment of birds of beauty or of song. Not until the soil is exposed to the rays of the sun, and wild flowers, and shrubs abounding in fruits, begin to spring, do we see the gayer plumage, or hear the sweet notes of the more precious of the species. But here, the beautiful winged vocalists, as if impatient of the obstruction that the character of the ground placed in the way of the more rapid progress of vegetation, had broken the island solitudes by the melody of their voices; and, before even a soil had been properly laid, they were joyously hymning into existence the new creation that was forming around them.

I have speculated, in an earlier chapter of this volume, with the freedom of irresponsibility, concerning the race to which the rational inhabitants of these islands belong, and the epoch of their arrival in the group. If any one, not so wedded to the principles of deductive philosophy as to disregard the suggestions of the imagination, would as freely speculate upon the origin and epoch of the advent of the irrational creatures found in the islands, in combination with the apparent operations of Nature in the formation of the group, they might give some of the same kind of aid to the Herschels, Lilles, and Cuviers of Europe, that natural science has probably received from the productions of the

poets' fancies. Let them ask of the plumed songsters of the forests of Owhyhee, whence they came, and of

> "The hill, the valley, fountain, and fresh shade,
> Made vocal by their song;"

when, and by what operations of Nature, they took their form, and at what epoch they first echoed the "Hail, universal Lord!" of these winged creatures that now chant the praises of the Creator of all.

But among the habitants of the air found on this part of Owhyhee, there is one species of which great numbers have been taken by the natives from time immemorial, on account of the value set upon two feathers especially of its plumage; and, as we saw several that had been lately caught, I shall take the opportunity of mentioning the traits that chiefly distinguish them, and the use made of the two precious feathers. The bird is about the size of the sky-lark. Its body and its beak are black. To form its tail, it has two white feathers at the root, of an equal length and edged with black, and two similar on either side these, and two perfectly black, reaching to a length equal to that of the body of the bird from the root of the tail to the point of the beak. But the two feathers which, on account of their beauty and

rarity constitute the great value set upon the bird, are of a beautiful bright yellow colour, and are found, one under each wing. These were, during the lifetime of Kamehameha I., for many years used for no other purpose than to adorn, if not entirely to compose the state cloak of that king; but they are now chiefly employed by the court ladies to form the band before mentioned which encircles their heads. There are also, under the tail of the bird, some other small yellow feathers of a tufty texture, and not of great value, but made use of by the ladies of less dignity for the same purpose. The name of the bird in the language of the natives is Oo, or something very similar to the rather rapid but distinct double sound of this vowel.

The next day, at an early hour, we remounted our beasts, and, leaving the inhabitants of this wild hamlet to the enjoyment of the songs of the winged tribes and the destruction of the most precious among them, we continued our descent towards the eastern coasts of the island.

As we proceeded, we soon found great increase in the quantity and the strength of the vegetation in which the soil abounded, till we passed through groves of trees, and finally forests of several miles in extent, bearing ample evidence of the much earlier formation and the more favourable position, of the lower lands upon this, than upon the opposite side of the island.

We had had hopes that our jaded horses would have benefited sufficiently by the day's rest, to be able to transport us to the end of our journey by an early hour this afternoon; but, notwithstanding the improvement of the country after the first part of the way, their joints seemed even less supple, and their feet but little better, than on the previous day: and it was not until near sunset that we discovered any signs of our approach to the little port of Hilo, when we came suddenly upon a piece of meadow land, on which were feeding several head of cattle, with letters marked upon their skins, which as plainly revealed the fact of their captivity as it assured us of the near termination of our journey.

In another half-hour we opened a view of Byron's bay; after which, we crossed some further meadow land, which brought us to the village of Hilo, seated upon the bay near the shore. The place appeared to consist merely of a few scattered huts, among which it was easy to distinguish the residence of an European; and we rode immediately up to that of Mr. Pitman, to whom I had brought the letter of introduction, and from whom we now met a hearty reception, without a word of reproach for our depredation at the crater of the volcano.

CHAPTER XVIII.

BYRON'S BAY AND HILO.

The Bay—Character of the Town—Buildings—Mr. Pitman's guest of another Character—Inhabitants—Missionaries' chief Mission house—School—Reception—Studies of the Boys—Agriculture—Attention given to Arithmetic—Reason for this—Estimation of the Capacity of the Natives—Examination of the Boys—Their Impression concerning their Institutions—Native educated for a Priest under the Idolatrous System—Practical Study of Agriculture—Neglect of the Art of Building—Consequences—Suggestions—An Ancient Crater—King's Birth-day.

BYRON'S bay, or Waiakue Kaikuono, as it is called by the natives, comprises a spacious harbour, formed by a reef of coral rocks, of about half-a-mile in breadth, through which there is a channel three-quarters of a mile wide, with a depth of water throughout, of about eleven fathoms. Hilo is a missionary station, both Protestant and Romish, and has one of the best Protestant schools in the islands. It is

well situated, as well in relation to the bay upon which it is placed as to the surrounding country; and promises to become one of the most flourishing settlements in the islands. It consists, at present, of thirty or forty scattered huts, a Protestant church, a small Romish chapel, the dwellings of the missionaries, a school-house, and several houses belonging to Mr. Pitman, by whom all the proper commerce of the place is carried on.

This hospitable gentleman, who entertained us with great hospitality at his own dwelling on the evening of our arrival, and afterwards put us into another house that belonged to him, came on the next morning to summon us to his breakfast-table. We had now the pleasure of being introduced to Mrs. Pitman, a very reserved and amiable native lady; and we sat down to a meal consisting of the ordinary components of the American early repast, which are much the same as those partaken of in Scotland, with the addition of excellent sweet potatoes, dry taro, oranges, and bananas.

Mr. Pitman had another guest, in the person of one of those victims of inebriety, who, after passing the bounds that are endurable in any civilized society at home, are often found "treading the stranger paths of banishment," and not unfrequently seated at the tables of those who have become voluntary exiles from their native

hearth, and fixed their dwelling where the love of adventure or of gain has attracted them.

After the polite attentions we had so frequently received at the hands of the missionaries, we made a point of calling on the chief of the mission here, Mr. Coan, on the morning after our arrival. We found the reverend gentleman at home, and we were much impressed with his benign and Christian deportment, as well as with the warm reception we experienced both from himself and from his lady, still young, and, as it was immediately apparent, of a kind and gentle disposition, well adapted to second the benevolent labours in which her husband was engaged. This amiable couple were living in the same simple style as the missionaries of Whyhohino, and had several children. Our observations were for the present confined to their neat little house and garden. Mr. Coan had been at great pains to make his residence a worthy pattern for the imitation of the native youths now receiving instruction here. The house, with the garden attached, stood upon an elevation commanding a fine view of the bay at the distance of about a mile, across open and partially cultivated ground, gradually descending towards the sea, with a few native huts set at distant intervals, and the Protestant Church standing quite apart from any other building. The garden was enclosed within a neat railing, with a little wicker-gate,

which led to a walk up to the house, that was bordered by ananas plants. On either side of this were several fruit trees, among which, on one side, stood a remarkably fine tamarind, which had been an object of the particular care of the missionary.

We next called on Mr. Lyman, the master of the native school, where our reception was not at first quite so satisfactory as we could have wished, or as we had been accustomed to meet with. Whether this proceeded from any peculiar disposition on the part of the missionary, to more reserve than we had before found, or was owing to the misunderstanding existing between some of the white inhabitants of the islands and the gentlemen of the mission, we could not then tell; but, as we were subsequently treated by the same gentleman with the attention we had hitherto received at the stations, we had no doubt that it arose from our seemingly too great curiosity about the schools, and the system of instruction generally pursued throughout the islands, which had been subjects of sufficiently ill-natured controversy to beget very natural doubts concerning the loyal intentions of unexpected visitors.

On the occasion of our second interview with Mr. Lyman, we were shown into the school-room while the boys were engaged at their studies, and afterwards introduced without doors, to the

same scholars occupied in the practical study of the most useful branch of industry among every people. We had, therefore, the occasion of witnessing the results which were developing themselves, both in the cultivation of the intellects of the boys by the more ordinary means, and by those best adapted to direct their future most necessary labours.

There had been a hundred boys in this school, previous to the appearance of the prevailing and late epidemics, which had not spared the inhabitants of this part of the island, but there were now only fifty-nine. Not that the number deceased was so great as to make this difference. Many had been kept at home after the vacation which had just terminated, in consequence of the decease of their parents, and the state of destitution in which their families were left; but the proportion these bore to the number wanting was not yet known. They were all lodged, fed, and clothed, as well as instructed, at the expense of the missionary board.

The branches of knowledge taught in the school were—reading, writing, arithmetic, a little music with singing, geography, history, with particular attention to such portions as seemed the best calculated to aid the study of sacred subjects, and finally the elements of agriculture, accompanied by practical lessons in tilling the ground

and the cultivation of the most useful productions.

We commenced a formal little examination of the boys, by passing between the forms and looking over their work, like high officials, magistrates, or other personages at a country school in England. After this Mr. Lyman placed us on seats of honour by his side, and requested us to put some questions to his scholars generally upon the several branches of their studies.

We had on other occasions observed, that the teachers in the schools were proudest of the progress their boys were making in arithmetic, and that this branch of learning, and geography, seemed to be more attended to than others. There is indeed an opinion prevailing among the white population at the seat of the government, that the native youths have a peculiar capacity for mathematical calculations. I do not, however, think there is solid ground for this. I rather believe that the method of teaching generally in the islands, has been more favourable to progress in this branch of knowledge than any other. The possession of superior powers of calculation is assuredly inconsistent with a certain want of steadiness in the pursuit of any object they engage in, which is a well-known characteristic of the islanders. Some among the best educated of them, being in easy circum-

stances, have commenced building houses and laying out grounds in the European style; but I do not believe there has been an instance of any one having completed the work which he has undertaken. I was shown several villas near Honolulu, which, after considerable labour had been bestowed upon them, had been abandoned without any assignable reason. This unsteadiness of purpose, or neglect from incapacity to follow up what they conceive, may remind any one who has been in our American provinces, of the Irish labourer there, who serves a master with faithfulness and contentment under circumstances where a Scot or an Englishman would very soon direct. Nevertheless, these are far from being parallel cases; for the native of the Sandwich Islands, in whom we observe this unsteadiness, has an education very little inferior to that of an European master of many servants, while our Hibernian countryman, instead of being taught whatever is most useful and best calculated to develope his admirable intelligence, is left to the guidance of an imperious tutor, who, if not quite so ignorant as himself, often uses what knowledge he does possess, for the purpose of subjecting his countryman to all the degrading consequences of abject obedience to dictation, as inconsistent with the state of society in the sister kingdom, as it is derogatory to the common nature we possess. Happily, however,

in the second generation of his race, in most parts of America, we may seek in vain for traits of character which degrade so many of our countrymen at home below the level of a semi-barbarous people.

From our seats of honour, we now commenced our more formal examination of Mr. Lyman's scholars. As my companion, Mr. Robertson, was able to question them without an interpreter, and was otherwise very competent to the task, he became the chief interrogator. We began, by asking questions in arithmetic, which required some little labour to work out; and, I confess, I was surprised at the quickness and correctness with which the answers were given. We next proceeded to subjects of history, giving no other aid to the scholars than a hint from the missionary enabled us to do, in the selection of such parts of the barren and fertile prairies of this wide field of knowledge as they had had the latest under their view. Our questions were chiefly upon the leading events in the Greek and Roman, and in the English and American history; and they were answered in a manner that we thought did equal honour to the master and the scholars.

After this, we asked the boys a few questions concerning their impressions of the character of the government under which they lived; and we were much gratified to find, from their answers,

that they not only took great interest in every thing that regarded public affairs, but that they seemed also to comprehend, and to be much attached to, their established political institutions.

One of the under-masters, who was a native of forty-five years of age, had been raised for a priest under the idolatrous system. Mr. Lyman informed us, that the old faith had taken such firm root in his mind, that he still showed occasional symptoms of relapse, though he was, by appeals to his reason, soon led back again into the right way. He seemed to be well acquainted with the secret springs that had at times influenced the leading events in the religious history of his country.

The mental labours of the boys ended for the day with the close of our examination, upon which there was a general scamper, not for hoops, rackets, and tennis-balls, to play away the remaining hours of the day, but for instruments and tools to commence their bodily labours, in the art of which they studied the practice in the open air. Then, from the school-room we passed to the grounds in the rear of the house, where some of the scholars began to hoe and some to dig, while others listened to the instructions of the missionary in the direction of the labour in which they engaged. It was a busy scene, and as gratifying to us as it was novel ; but we did

not think quite so much discipline had entered into the management of this branch of the boys' studies, as into that of their mental labours in-doors. It was a step, however, in the most solid and sure way—perhaps to become an example for the guidance of future more important efforts, for civilizing the countless millions of our species that inhabit the unenlightened countries of the globe.

After what we found instituted, and making such fair progress here, some thoughts suggested themselves concerning the step that might, with the fairest prospects, be next taken in the path of instruction, so well commenced in this school. Two great objects are especially the aim of the European friends of the natives—their religious and moral progress, and their preservation from the early extinction with which they seem threatened. The former of these has been hitherto the very soul of the mission, and may want no other change than well-digested measures for more effectually teaching the English language; but, as its attainment must be only of partial and temporary benefit, without equal success in the second object of the mission, it is most desirable that definite measures should be taken to attain this also. The people should be taught such of the arts of civilized life, as are best adapted both to place them above want, and to protect them from diseases springing from their

change of manners, and their intercourse with Europeans. The first step in this way, we have indeed just seen, in the practical study of the art of agriculture. The next should be the most advised attention to the art of building, and the adaptation of its principles to the altered condition and present wants of the islanders.

When the natives engaged as formerly, in wars, sports of the most healthful kind, and war-exercises, their physical constitutions were better than at present, and their grass huts were not perhaps ill-adapted to their condition; but, since the changes above mentioned, it is far otherwise. The walls of the huts, in which they continue to dwell, are thoroughly soaked, and as damp as it is possible for them to be, during the rainy season, which is at the coolest period of the year, and sometimes lasts for three months. By this, diseases are engendered or aggravated, to which, in conjunction with some tenaciously held customs before mentioned, must be chiefly attributed the depopulation of the group. The Society which has done so much, might accomplish all that is in the power of human means to bring about, were they to send out a few competent hands to devise the best means that the materials which the islands afford might admit, for lodging the inhabitants in such huts as would shield them from the effects of the dampness during the inclement season.

While all the young farmers were engaged, with their several implements, the missionary led us to a few hundred yards in the rear of his dwelling, to inspect one of those natural evidences of the entire, as well as recent, volcanic formation of the whole group, which abound in the islands. Here we found the cone of a small and long extinct volcano, in the interior of which a soil had been completely formed. It did not exceed fifty yards in circumference, nor was it raised more than a third of that measure above its base and the plain. We found the soil within, consisting of fine black mould, formed, of course, of decomposed lava, and lying about fifteen or twenty feet below the sides of the crater. It was now sown with plantains, which had attained a superior height to any we had seen in other parts of the islands, or in any other country.

On the 17th March, five days after our arrival at Hilo, we kept the King's birth-day. Mr. Pitman fired a salute from a single old rusty cannon, which comprised all the warlike engines in his stores, and afterwards gave a dinner to all the inhabitants in the place whom he deemed refined enough to sit at "good men's feasts," and we drank his majesty's health in champagne.

CHAPTER XIX.

HILO.

Sugar and Coffee Estate—Inspection—Busy Scenes—The Boiling house—Process—Character of the Native Labourers—Chinese Overseers—Chinese Tenants—Effects of the Settlement of Chinese in the Islands—Mingling of Races—Difficulty of Contracting Marriages—Chinese Stoicism—Marriage of a Chinese with a Native Woman—Regulations of the Government—Comparison of Characters—Moral Uses to be made of the Chinese—Anecdote illustrative of Chinese Barbarity—Chinese Superstitions—Manner of Overcoming the Devil—The Coffee Estate—Method of Raising the Coffee—Quality of the Coffee—Visit to a Cataract.

Mr. PITMAN introduced us, during our stay at Hilo, to a fine estate he had himself planted in the rear of the bay, which not only afforded us much gratification for its own sake, but furnished us with a favourable opportunity of seeing several of the Chinese settlers, in a light calculated to give us a fair idea of the present position of their countrymen generally among the mixed races in the islands, as well as of the part they are

reserved to play in the settlement of the population destined to raise the country to the condition it is so well adapted to attain.

We found the estate situated upon elevated ground, between one and two miles from the port, commanding a fine view of the bay and the ocean, and in the midst of a country still rising as it recedes from the shore, and comprehending one of the most fertile districts in the island. It produced chiefly sugar as an article of export, at present; but it was in a fair way of adding the profits of a large coffee plantation.

We first inspected the sugar department, with its various buildings, sheds, and mills. The machinery and apparatus employed, from the gathering in of the crop to the appearance of the sugar, were all at the same time in operation; and the scene was as full of life as if the estate had been in one of our Atlantic islands. In the field, men of the native race were cutting the cane, and boys and girls were running to and fro to supply the mill, which was fed by one single hand, while others were hurrying away with the substance that remains after the cane is exhausted to mix with the leaves, which serve for fodder for the cattle.

In the boiling-house, into which the juice runs from the mill, we found a succession of boilers and coolers, through which the process of the manufacture might be traced from the

trickling of the succulent matter down the sides of the first vessel into which it fell, to the appearance of the firmly set sugar from which the molasses is drained, and run off to a reservoir provided to receive it. Here our attention was arrested by the presence of two of the Chinese who were superintending the works, which led to Mr. Pitman informing us of the plan he had adopted in the management of his estate, and the especial use he was making of the yellow men.

The few sugar estates in other parts of the islands had been very unproductive while native labour, even under European superintendence, was exclusively employed. But whalers and other vessels touching at the islands, had occasionally left some Chinese behind them; and it was soon discovered, that not only were these men better labourers, generally, than the natives, but that they were so superior in industry and steadiness, that they could be employed with the greatest advantage as overseers of estates. Mr. Pitman had employed several of them, first as labourers, as others had done, and afterwards for some time as overseers. But, upon finding his estate wonderfully thriving under their management, he had determined to go farther than this, and to give them a direct interest in its prosperity. For this purpose, after averaging the crops of the last two or three seasons, and making calculations upon the chances of the new

plantations, he let his estate to the same men he had advanced from labourers to be overseers, at a fixed annual rent, from which arrangement he was reaping great benefit. Such indeed was the success of the management of these men, that even the thoughtless natives had been induced to perform more work than before; and the most listless among them were becoming, under the present superintendence, comparatively industrious. In accounts, above all things, the Chinese were quick, punctual, and exact.

Though the appearance of the Asiatics in the group, marks an era in the moral and civil history of the islands, it can hardly be supposed that it will for a long time much affect their political position; for though a superior class of the race will by and by probably form a considerable portion of the population, the Chinese are not a people of a character likely to obtain influence under popular or any other such European institutions as must prevail here; nor is it probable that they will even appreciate them, or desire to have any share in public affairs. Men must long have known a state of civilization of a very different character from that which prevails in China, before they can comprehend the advantages of possessing an influence over institutions from which they do not derive particular and immediate benefit: they must have acquired a much higher degree

of moral sentiment than the Celestial Empire affords, before they will make any regard of interests not exclusively or directly their own.

But whatsoever may be exactly the future relations in which the pure Chinese will stand to the entire population of the islands, the men of that race serve at this time to fill the wide gap between the Europeans and the natives, which is too great to admit of union of purpose without an intermediate link in the incongruous materials of the social chain. We have just seen this operating in the arrangement of labour; and it is also beginning to be manifest in the more particular relations between the different races. The moral distance which separates the Europeans and the islanders, does not admit of marriages between them being at all equal, though several have been with some success contracted. If it had been possible that any other union could be substituted, that did not place the native woman upon an equality with the European wives of the islands, the women proceeding from this alliance might have been educated and made equal to contract the more sacred Christian bond; but, as it is, the Chinese are not ill-suited by their union with the native women to soften down the moral asperities inseparable from the condition of such an heterogeneous population. Unfortunately, however, for the present, there have been great difficulties about

alliances between these parties, owing to the rigour with which the missionaries insist, not merely upon the Chinese receiving baptism before contracting the marriage, which the looseness of their religious principles renders them at all times ready to accept, but also, that they should afford sufficient proofs of the reality of their conversion to satisfy the missionary called upon to officiate, which is a very different and a very difficult thing.

The marriage of one of the Chinese of this place with a native woman, had lately taken place under the following circumstances, which were related to us by the Reverend Mr. Coan himself. Application was made to him by the parties to celebrate the marriage, to which he replied, that he would be very willing to do so, upon the conversion and baptism of the Chinese. The Chinese, believing that all that was necessary was included in the ceremony of baptism, concerning the proper signification of which he seemed to have no desire to be instructed, agreed very willingly to the terms prescribed, and brought his betrothed the very next day, to have the baptismal and marriage ceremonies performed at the same time. The missionary was surprised at his appearance with these expectations, and the Chinese was as much disappointed to find that neither the one rite nor the other would be performed until he had given

proofs of his understanding and firmly believing all the essential points of the Christian revelation. He now, willingly however, accepted Mr. Coan's offer to give him all necessary instruction, and for the present retired.

The day after his disappointment, the man came to commence his course of study of the religion, of which up to this time he had hardly heard a word beyond its name; but it was soon apparent to the missionary, that there was a wide difference between the task of converting a Chinese and that of instructing a Sandwich-islander. Our great opponent to the doctrine of innate ideas, might scarcely have found a better example of the originally unimpressed character of the mind, than one of these islanders, not so old as to have been under the spell of their ancient religion, nor sufficiently instructed at an early age concerning the new, to have received the impressions that can only be indelibly stamped upon unoccupied understandings. It is very easy to write legibly upon a sheet of white paper, if one will take the smallest pains, but it is difficult to do the same upon a sheet of parchment covered with characters long since too firmly impressed to admit of their being effaced. Moreover, there existed no means of communication between the missionary and his pupil, save through the native tongue, which, besides being insufficient for such a purpose, was very

imperfectly understood by the Chinese. With all these disadvantages, however, their studies were continued for several days, when the Chinese declared that he now quite understood, as well as believed, all that was taught him. But, notwithstanding this, the missionary, after putting some appropriate questions, was convinced that he neither believed nor understood anything whatever of all that had been communicated to him, and declined to celebrate the marriage until truly assured of the conversion. It happened, however, whether by law, or by custom alone, that the government native agents had been at one time allowed to celebrate marriages between Christian parties; and, upon the downright refusal of the missionary to perform the ceremony, while he believed the Chinese to be still in his original condition of heathen darkness, the parties applied to the agent of the district, who, after some hesitation, finally united them; and the affair was ended by a reprimand from the authorities at the seat of the government to all the parties concerned, and, I believe, due notice to future lovers, that any other marriage of the kind would not be recognised.

After these remarks upon the character generally of the Chinese, and their willingness to mingle their blood with the native race of the islands, it will be at least apparent, that there is an element in the present society of the group,

that may by and by serve to unite the two extremes of the European and the native races, from which a population may be raised, based on the blood of the three races, sufficiently blending for political union, yet comprising such varieties of character and capacity, as to assure to future generations the most convenient division of labour in every branch of toil, both mental and physical, that the most enthusiastic advocates for whatever tends to perfect every element of civilization might desire.

At an earlier period of the travels to which these sketches belong, I had the opportunity of becoming acquainted with an isolated portion of the Chinese people, under peculiar circumstances. On that occasion I chanced to see them in their holiday mood, full of hospitality, good humour, and urbanity, and I did not allow the opportunity to pass without setting these favourable features in the character of the Celestials in prominent relief. But it happened also, that I heard at the same time such accounts of the evil lives and barbarities of the same people, seen under other circumstances, as induced me to qualify the favourable report of what fell under my observation, by relating all that I heard also, through sources the most pure to be obtained. In the phase in which we have just seen the Chinese of these islands, we have at

least had occasion to mark several good features of their character, and especially their industry and their punctuality; but I am compelled for the same reason, and I have the same means as before, to report what I heard here likewise, and upon the best authority, concerning the contrary side of the character of this most peculiar people.

A short time before I arrived at Honolulu, an English ship put into that port on her voyage from Hong Kong to some part of the coast of America, and chanced to have a Chinese woman on board, a domestic in the service of an English family. No Chinese woman had at that time been seen in the islands, so that the circumstance caused at least curiosity enough to make the event very soon generally known; and of course it reached the ears of the few Chinese that were residing in the place. Among these, and at the head of his people, was a Mandarin, Slam Sing by name, who was keeping a little store and dealing in Chinese merchandize; and this worthy magistrate, impressed, as it appeared, with a sense of the obligation which the arrival of his countrywoman imposed upon him, applied to the King, stating that whereas by the laws of China no woman was allowed to leave her country, it was his duty to require that this woman should be given up to him, as the chief

of her nation resident in the islands, in order that he might deal with her according to the laws of the Empire.

The King was embarrassed by the nature of the question. That he should be so—that an independent sovereign in any country, whether he were weak or strong, should be perplexed, and uncertain how he ought to meet so strange a demand, will not appear wonderful to any one who may have perused the foregoing chapters. The circumstances, inseparable from the state of transition, as well moral as political, and it may be, even physical, in which we find the population of the islands, have involved questions new in the history of civilization, such as might puzzle much shrewder men and more experienced sovereigns than King Kamehameha III. He might, if he refused, compromise the good understanding which he had hitherto maintained with the mighty prince of the Celestial Empire. He might equally endanger his relations with the British sovereign, if he allowed one of the ships of her Majesty's subjects to be searched, and the rights of any of the crew or passengers to be violated within his dominions. In this dilemma, however, he very wisely sent for the British Consul-general, who was cautious in his counsel to the King on the occasion. The general advised his Majesty to allow him first to visit the Mandarin, that he might at least

discover what grounds the man had for his claim, and what was his intention, in case it were granted. To this the King readily consented; and the Consul-general set off for the dwelling of Slam Sing. He found the Chinese magistrate engaged in his store; and, upon questioning him, if he was not able to discover any grounds for his claim, he was at least able to obtain sufficient information concerning his intentions after he should get possession of his countrywoman, to satisfy himself, and release the King from all further embarrassment. In fact, the Mandarin informed the general that it was his intention to inflict upon the Chinese woman the full penalty of the law of China which she had violated, and that this was—let any unprepared fair reader hold her breath for a second—to suffer death by being buried alive.

It is unnecessary to report anything further concerning what passed between the King and the British Consul-general. Suffice it, ample measures were taken to prevent any attempt to defeat the humane decision come to by the King, to prevent this infamy at all hazards. I may remark, however, that the general, who declared that nothing but the man's own word would have been sufficient for him to credit, what he was now compelled to believe, thinking that I had an equal right to the same proof of so strange a circumstance, before giving credence to what he

himself informed me, led me to the house of the Celestial Magistrate, and, while I was present, asked the man whether, if he had obtained possession of the woman, he would have gone to the extreme he had declared to be his intention while his countrywoman was in the port; and to this, the Chinese replied: that it was the law of his country, which he would most certainly have caused to be put in execution.

I must mention one more little incident, equally illustrative of the character of this peculiar people. Upon Mr. Pitman's calling on one occasion upon a Chinese of this place, he found the man occupied in a manner that seemed to carry a degree of mystery with it, and excited, at first his curiosity, and then his suspicions. The yellow man had a fire behind his house, over which he was sitting, surrounded by pots, kettles, pans, ladles, and bottles; and some silver money was strewed upon the ground near him. "This man must be coining!" said or thought the white magistrate of Hilo. "There cannot be a doubt about the matter. I must arrest and send the intolerable rogue to Honolulu. The fellow has no doubt escaped from justice in his own country."

"Pray my friend," now roughly demanded the Magistrate of the Chinese, who spoke English indifferently well, "account to me for what you are about."

"Very willingly," said the Chinese, without exhibiting any surprise or apprehension.

"What are you doing with all this apparatus, and this silver coin?"

"Give me but time, Sir—be a little less hasty, and you shall be satisfied: I have no secret to conceal."

The yellow man then informed the white magistrate, that he was engaged in forging arms, yet, not to encounter either white men, yellow men, or Sandwich-islanders, but to face the devil, with whom he had already had several encounters, and in one of which he had lost his cue. In the last, indeed, he said, had it not been for the devil's abhorrence of fire arms, with which he had been provided and discharged, he might have been torn to pieces. Leaden balls, however, which he had fired, had only a partial effect. They only somewhat repressed the fiend's boldness. But, he said, he was now casting some silver balls, which were alone effective against the prince of darkness, who never revisited any one from whom he had received a volley of them. It was only the poverty of men, he added, or their ignorance of the sole weapon effectual against his hellish devices, that gave the devil so much power over every people.

This tale would doubtless in many parts of the world have suggested method in the man's madness, and have rather confirmed than set at

rest the white magistrate's suspicions. The place and party, however, were, after a moment's reflection by one acquainted with the character of the Chinese, quite sufficient to put aside the suspicions of any plot against the treasury interests of the state; and the worthy proprietor left the fellow to carry on his war with his spiritual enemy after the manner most agreeable to himself. But it is time to remember, that we have not yet left the estate whose tenants have led us into this digression.

From the sugar works we proceeded, still rising, towards the more elevated ground of the coffee plantation. Arrived here, we found ourselves at an elevation which on one side commanded a noble view of the sea beyond the bay, with a portion of the coast, and on the other, the mountainous land in the interior of the island. A broad way conducted through an extensive plantation, sown with 22,000 young coffee trees, and producing a considerable number of bread-fruit, and tall and fine tamarind, trees. The greater part of the coffee trees were very young, and were rearing beneath the broad leaves of the hardier plantain, which protected them from the too-scorching rays of the sun. The kindly growth of the plantain, and the facility with which it is raised, render it peculiarly adapted to the wants of the natives of the climates in which it is found. A single hand, with

the use of no other implement than the hoe, may cultivate several acres of these plants. They spring up rapidly, bear but once, and decay, but are succeeded by shoots from the same roots. To render them, therefore, of the use which was here made of them, it is only necessary that a time should be chosen for their plantation that may assure to the young coffee trees the benefit of their full shade during the hottest months of the year.

On another occasion, our hospitable friend accompanied us to visit a cataract which had been named the Rainbow Fall. After passing over much rough ground, we came upon a broad basin of water, at one extremity of which a stream fell from the height of fifty or sixty feet. The ground around was picturesque, and the banks of a ravine formed below the cataract were covered with a broad-leafed creeping plant, resembling ivy; while a deep cavern entered beneath the falling waters, which had of course its legend in common with everything strange, or presenting any object of terror, among a primitive people. We did not, however, hear any connected story concerning it, or anything worth remembering.

CHAPTER XX.

HILO—*continued.*

Arrival of an American Whaler—Account of a Mutiny—Galapagus Isles—Numerous Mutinies in the Pacific—Capture of the Mutineers—Mutiny and Massacres on board the Amelia—Arrival of the Vessel at Honolulu—Remarkable Natural Phenomenon—Consequence—Loss of Life—Speculations concerning the Causes—Probable Formation of a New Island—Earthquakes of 1838—Arrival of Mr. Paris—Account of Changes in the Condition of the Volcano—Missionary Forebodings.

On the 23rd of the month, the American whaler Hope, Captain Christian, came into the bay in search of supplies. She had been six months out of port, and therefore brought no news, commonly so called, from any part of the changing world; but she was the herald of the tidings of one of those instances of mutiny and violence, with which the history of the discoveries and commerce of Europeans in these seas abounds, and which are still of frequent occurrence in many parts. It seems as if the wide Pacific and its innumerable islands, offered at

once the two greatest of temptations to the very crimes of which it has been the scene—security from pursuit, and an isle "to throne in." And if we may judge from the numbers of instances that have come to light, even within the last half century, and the numbers of ships that have been missing and never heard of, we shall be disposed to believe that there are more Pitcairn's Islands than that which was peopled by the mutineers of the Bounty; or, that many more have been sought for, if never found, by the perpetrators of similar outrages.

Captain Christian informed us that, after fishing for some months off the coast of Peru, he had touched at one of the Galapagus islands to procure terrafin, or great tortoises, which are found upon these islands in almost incredible numbers. On his bringing up, about a mile off the shore, he perceived some men upon the beach, which, as he did not believe the island to be inhabited, much surprised him. But upon taking up his telescope, he was still more surprised to find they were white men, and in European costume. They appeared to be making signals to him, which allayed some suspicions he at first entertained, that they were a party of mutineers; he therefore made arrangements to put himself as quickly as possible in communication with them; and, after overcoming some obstacles to his landing, he found himself on shore in the

midst of a party, not of mutineers, but of the victims of one of the Pacific mutinies.

The short tale of the party is as follows. They consisted of the captain of a Chilian brig, and nineteen men of his crew and passengers, who had landed here to procure terrafin and recreate themselves on their voyage, and been abandoned by their vessel, of which they knew no more. It appeared that the anticipation of much sport had induced the passengers to land with the rest, imprudently leaving alone on board, a girl of only ten years of age; and that the party had no sooner landed, than the brig made sail and left the island. They had at this time, however, been only a few days on shore, and had been occupied in making preparations to enable them to reach the coast of Peru in their own boat; but they had not been able, when the ship appeared, to recross the surf at the place at which they had landed, and hauled the boat up, which had prevented their coming off to her. All but one among them, who had been a baker of Tarquina and was now on board the Hope, refused the offer of Captain Christian to carry them away and land them at these islands, preferring to make the attempt to reach the coast of America in their boat. The sea is rarely much agitated between these islands and the continent, for which the great ocean is, doubtless, indebted for the somewhat too favour-

able appellation it received from the Spaniards who first coasted its shores, as the reader of the first chapter of this volume will have discovered, —and they could carry with them any quantity of terrafin they thought proper for the supply of their wants in the way of food. The Chilian captain, however, promised the captain of the whaler 5000 dollars out of his own purse, if he would capture the vessel, in case of his falling in with her, and bring her to the port of Valparaiso.

Whatever might have been the design of these mutineers, after the cowardly act, it soon met, at least, such retribution as South American ideas of justice were capable of awarding. Captain Christian, not many days after his visit to the Galapagus Isles, called off the Marquesas, where he learned that the brig and the mutineers had been captured by the French, who were in possession of those islands. It seemed she had appeared in the offing, manœuvring in such a manner as to cause suspicions, which induced the French commander here to board her in an armed boat, to ascertain what she was. On his stepping upon her deck he perceived at once that she had neither her complement of men nor her proper commander on board, upon which he demanded her papers. Instead of these, however, the mate had his tale to tell. But the French officer, finding nothing to cor-

roborate what the Chilian informed him, arrested the men, and, after taking the child on shore, sent the vessel with the Chilians in irons to Valparaiso, in charge of some of his own seamen. All that had transpired concerning what passed on board after the mutiny, up to the recapture of the vessel, had been obtained from the child. It amounted to little more than the account of her own treatment, which had been the most brutal that can be conceived.

Another case of mutiny in the vicinity of the Sandwich Islands, occurred immediately before my arrival at Woahoo. A young Englishman, who was in the service of the consul-general while I was in the islands, and who had navigated the vessel and brought her into Honolulu, after she had been taken and re-taken by different sections of her crew, and all her officers massacred, gave a full account of the affair.

The vessel was the schooner Amelia, which had sailed from Mazatlan, upon the west coast of Mexico, bound, I believe, to Hong Kong, with a freight of silver and gold. Three of the men, being Spanish creoles, had, it appeared, formed a design to murder all the officers and two male passengers that were on board; and, after overawing or subjecting the rest of the crew, to carry the ship into some port where they could secure the produce of their enterprise.

They first took an opportunity of stabbing the second mate while he was forward on the ship's deck, and the captain was below; and, next, of murdering the captain and Mr. Cook, a passenger, both of whom came on deck, unarmed, to discover the cause of the noise they heard; and, subsequently, the other passenger, whom they induced to quit his defensive position, armed and in command of the cabin, by a promise, at his own proposition, to set him adrift in one of the vessel's boats, with his wife and her maid whom he had with him.

The next act of the tragedy was twenty-four hours of drinking, riot, and playing with the gold and silver that was on board, which they brought up and threw about the deck like dirt; and the last, the massacre of the three mutineers by another section of the crew. After this the vessel was, by the consent of all that were living, brought by this young man to Woahoo.*

I shall now mention a remarkable natural event, of which this particular spot of Owhyhee was the chief scene, so lately as in the year 1837, by which some of the natives perished, while nearly all the rest that were living on the lower grounds owed their lives to their expertness in the water, or to the fortunate circum-

* See the deposition in the Appendix.

stance of an English whaler being at anchor in the bay. This account will differ from that given by other visitors to this island. I shall, however, state precisely what I was informed by Mr. Lyman, an eye-witness of the phenomenon.

About mid-day, while the inhabitants of the place were engaged as they are wont to be, some in musing by the sea-side, some in trimming their banana plants, and some in preparing taro, or other articles of vegetable diet, suddenly the sea retired and laid open the secrets of the deep to some distance from the shore. The circumstance, however, though nothing similar was known to have occurred before, instead of causing alarm among the natives, only excited their curiosity; so that many of them followed the retiring flood to the distance of nearly half a mile from the shore. Shortly, however, the sea returned in a vast wave about twenty feet in height, rushing furiously towards the shore, carrying with it all the people that had descended from the beach, and sweeping onward till it passed over the usual bourn of the ocean, dashing to pieces and carrying off all the huts that were upon the lower ground to the distance of a quarter of a mile in-land, then returning to the bay with the wreck of the huts and all the inhabitants, their domestic animals, and the rest of their property. Thus there were now about a hundred men, women, and

children, all floating in the bay, so completely unprepared for such an adventure, that a great portion must have perished, notwithstanding their amphibious habits, had it not been for the fortunate circumstance of the presence of the whaler above mentioned, which was the Admiral Cockburn. The ship was riding at single anchor in six fathoms of water, at the time the sea retired, upon which she was suddenly left in about three fathoms, when the captain dropped his best bower. Soon after this, the mighty wave swept over his ship, but without carrying away any of the men, whom he had taken measures to secure, or even driving his ship from her anchors. Thus he was able, with his six or seven boats and strong crew, to pick up so many of the exhausted swimmers, that it was found, after the sea had regained its wonted repose, and the inhabitants recovered from their terror, that there were only thirteen, chiefly children, missing.

I am not aware that any measures have been taken to discover the cause of this remarkable phenomenon, which the safety of ships and the interests of science equally demand. The same wonder occurred upon the coasts of all the islands of the group, but in a less and less degree, in proportion to their distances from Owhyhee on the course of the wave, which was in the direction that the islands lie, from south-

east to north-west. This, and the action of the sea during the occurrence, favours a supposition of the rising of the ground by some agent beneath the waters, and even of the formation of the base of a new island, rather than the mere eruption, as some have conjectured, of a submarine volcano. The sea was observed, as above stated, first to sink and retire, and then to return in an enormous wave, which it is evident, is precisely what would be caused by the sudden rising of the waters at a certain distance from the shore, from whatever cause this might proceed.

The geological history of the group, with the relative position of the different members of which it is composed, equally indeed suggest the probable early appearance of a new island. The apparent dates of the formation of the islands which exist, are to be observed in the more or less advanced state of the soil, the progress of vegetation, and the cessation or diminution of the number of the volcanic eruptions and earthquakes. Thus we find the island of Kawai in these respects the most advanced, and Owhyhee the most backward; as if the former had first arisen, while the volcanic action from which it proceeded had continued advancing from north-west to south-east, and were still advancing and preparing to raise another isle off this coast, or south-east of the island which seems last to have appeared.

The autumn of 1838 was also memorable in the geological annals of the group, on account of the number of earthquakes which occurred. At this place, during the whole of two days and nights, the earth trembled violently, with scarce any intermission. The inhabitants at the different islands give equally grave accounts of the character of these shocks, with some variations in the details. The people around this bay state, that after eight or ten heavy shocks, the earth continued agitated during the period above-mentioned, in such a manner, that the plants and trees, from a blade of grass to a koa tree, trembled incessantly with more rapid motion than a twig shaken by the hand, while frightful noises issued continually from beneath the ground. In other places, the motion is described as having been undulating, perpendicular, horizontal, or partaking at intervals of all these movements; though, owing to the light character of the huts of the natives, very few were thrown down.

On the 24th of the month, the Reverend Mr. Paris arrived from Whyhohino, after following our track across the pass of the mountains. The accounts he brought of the state of the great volcano, when he passed by the crater, were to us highly interesting, and confirmatory of those given by all travellers who have observed this great natural phenomenon in any of the various phases which it presents. It had

been in more violent action since we passed by, and the wide interior of the crater, over the crust or black ledge of which we had marched with so much apparent security, had become one vast lake of liquid fire, from the bosom of which large mounds of solid matter had arisen, and several new cones, which were vomiting their fires amid the fearful turmoil around.

The next day being Sunday, Mr. Paris preached to a congregation of between 300 and 400 natives. His sermon appeared to me to excite much more than the usual attention, and to cause an impression such as I had not observed in any of the churches of the natives before, which I attributed to the eloquence and pathos of the preacher, but which I found afterwards, whatever were Mr. Paris' powers of oratory, proceeded rather from apprehensions which certain forebodings of the missionary had occasioned. The people, however, were probably not taken by surprise, though affected, at hearing from the lips of one of their teachers that, the measure of their iniquities being full, offended Heaven was about to cut them utterly off from the land, that their place might be filled by the children of a worthier race. Of the probable fulfilment of the prophecy, if any one race be really more worthy than another, few would be disposed to dispute; but, while a particle of hope exists, of saving the natives from utter extir-

pation, by any means now operating, or reserved to be tried, the discourse might scarcely be deemed politic. It was to us the more unwelcome, on account of its coming from the very source through which all the friends of the natives have chiefly hoped to receive the earliest notice of the approaching regeneration of their race.

CHAPTER XXI.

HILO—*continued.*

Traveller becomes a Christian Instructor—Causes thereof—Not versed in Doctrinal Questions—A Cause of Religious Intolerance—Missionary's Charity—His Opinions—Alarming Position of the Traveller—Consoling Points—The Audience—Missionary's Arrangements—Marriages *en masse*—Discourse upon the Holy Land—Plan thereof—Degrees of Intelligence among the Natives—General Impressions—More familiar Tale of Travels—Satisfaction of the Traveller—Missionary's Sermon—Opinion concerning the Lord's Prayer—Embark for Woahoo—Views upon the Coast—Whyhio—Touch at Kailua—Missionaries on Board—Impressions—Arrival at Honolulu.

It remains to add to the above account of our sojourn at Hilo, a rather novel incident in the intercourse between travellers, missionaries, and any of the late adopted children of the great Christian commonwealth. I fear I shall not be able to make this report without placing myself, for a short time, in rather too prominent a position for any traveller to occupy—"some have greatness thrust upon them"—for any one at

least who should not be engaged in more important researches than those which these pages record. I must, indeed, appear in the character of an instructor, which was sufficiently new in my adventures. I must even stand side by side with the principal missionary in the islands, on the rostrum of a Christian temple; and I will not pretend to feel no exultation upon the occasion—no just pride, which some might call vanity, at being able to remember having been, as I believe, for once usefully employed—no satisfaction at being found aiding good men in their benevolent labours.

We were frequently, while here, entertained with great kindness by the Reverend Mr. Coan; and in exchange for the information we received from him concerning the mission, and such other subjects as were made matter of conversation between us, we gave an account (for the travels of my companion also were not inconsiderable) of our adventures, and of customs and traits of character we had had the opportunity of observing in other countries. My travels, however, happened to have been in such parts of the world as in a more particular manner interested our good friends and hosts. We have not in England, in hardly any circle of society, a dearth of travellers who have visited, or of books that describe, the "Holy Land," and the adjacent countries; but, as it is otherwise in the islands

of the Pacific Ocean, all indeed of our white friends were much interested with the accounts I was able to give them of my journeys and sojournings in the countries which that term comprises; and it occurred to Mr. Coan that it might serve a useful purpose, to have suitable portions of the same information communicated as directly, and in as striking a manner as possible, to his native Christian family. Thus, he requested of me that I would, upon an early day which he would appoint, share with him the broad estrade that served for a desk and pulpit in the church, and through his interpretation deliver a familiar discourse for that purpose. But before proceeding further, I ought, perhaps, to say a few words concerning the religious relations in which the parties that will occupy this estrade stood to each other.

I do not know any one less informed than myself, in all that kind of knowledge which belongs to the history or analysis of the faith, the ritual, or the dogmas of particular churches; but it seems to me, that the great obstacle to a universal system of religion, not a common Church, but as far as all that is essential is concerned, which I suppose to be whatever belongs to the lives of men, their charity, and conduct towards one another,—is, not so much their differences in doctrinal points, impossible for mankind to agree upon, nor even the ana-

themas of some sects against others, as the attempts, as well of the laity as of the ministers of religion, to make proselytes of Christians of different forms of worship from themselves.

> " For modes of faith let graceless zealots fight,
> His can't be wrong whose life is in the right."

Out of this proceed humours which tend to weaken the common bond that should unite men with one another, and many impediments to the progressive improvement of the best social institutions. Were this bane of that charity which is the soul of Christianity abandoned, at least one obstacle to a closer union of men of different sects living under the same political institutions would be removed, which might be a step towards some international spiritual union, not amalgamation, that might lead to such increased intercourse of every kind, as would perhaps have a certain influence upon the relations even of peace and war, among all the nations of the world.

I am not able to say that the missionary with whom I was to share the rostrum of the house of prayer, held the opinions that the subject has just led me into expressing, and for the evil or good of which I stand alone accountable; but I was the more desirous of contributing what little might be in my power, in aid of Mr. Coan's labours, upon finding him possessed of a degree of charity I was not prepared to find in the

minister of a Church in which tolerance is not, I believe, a distinguishing characteristic. The missionary, during our agreeable intercourse with him, informed me, indeed, that, before he entered upon his mission, while very young—which must be remembered—and before he had mixed in general society, he entertained opinions, tending to establish that the members of his community alone were capable of inheriting the kingdom prepared for all good men before the beginning of time; but that, since his intercourse with men of other creeds, his opinions had been greatly modified. He was now, he said, not only sensible of the excellence of other Protestant institutions, but even of opinion, that the differences which at first seemed to be so great between them were more in appearance than reality, and, moreover, that those differences, wherever charity abounded, might perhaps even form an indispensable element in a grand common system, destined at some future day to unite the whole Christian family by the closest bonds of amity and affection.

On the 18th of the month, being Sunday, Mr. Coan, after his sermon, gave his congregation notice, that on the Wednesday following the English traveller who had lately arrived at Hilo, would give them an account of travels he had made in the land so familiar to all of them through the preaching and other means of

instruction of their missionaries, and particularly to those who were able themselves to read the Bible, that had been happily translated for their advantage.

The congregation seemed to receive this intimation with curious interest, and on the day appointed, the missionary and the traveller appeared together upon the broad railed-in estrade on which Mr. Coan was wont to offer up his prayers, and deliver his discourses. My feelings were, I confess, at this moment, not only novel to me, but also rather alarming. Not a particle of the orator, unless it be shut up in some secret cell of the mind's narrow storehouse not likely to be ever unsealed, belonged to the whole of my moral constitution, and least of all of that kind which the occasion seemed to demand. There would be, it is true, very consoling circumstances. No matter what the style or the language might be—figurative or plain—correct or loose—calm or vivid—magniloquent or modest, it would fall with much the same effect upon the ears of the greater portion of the congregation. Only one or two white men, indeed, who were all that would be present, might be capable of forming any judgment of its merit; and I believed I had already secured their charitable reception of all they would receive directly from the mouth of the *parvenu* orator. The whole would reach the ears of the rest of

the assembly, if a judgment might be formed from Mr. Coan's conversational powers, in a style worthy of the subject and the occasion.

After these remarks, I do not think any one will be apprehensive that the traveller is about to attempt a reproduction of the dual-discourse of this day. It will doubtless suffice to mention the heads of what was delivered, with any little accompanying incident that may not have escaped his recollection.

As the white party, including the wives and families of the missionaries, entered the church together, the officiating missionary and the traveller ascended the estrade, and seated themselves on a bench by the wall, while the rest took their places in front of the railing by which the estrade was inclosed. When Mr. Coan rose, the church had probably within it, about three hundred natives of both sexes and various ages, including Mr. Lyman's scholars with their maps in their hands; and upon the walls behind him hung some drawings illustrative of the geography of the countries upon which we were about to speak, all hastily prepared for this purpose. The day, however, was not to be entirely devoted to the principal object of the meeting. We had first some eight or ten marriages, all celebrated by one common ceremony. After this the proper affair of the day com-

menced with a religious service, opened by a prayer from the missionary, chiefly asking a blessing upon the discourse about to be delivered, and concluding with a hymn.

Mr. Coan now proceeded to state to his congregation more exactly the object for which he had called them together; which, he said, was by presenting to their minds in a more lively manner than heretofore, the sites of the most memorable events related in Scripture history, to impress them the more strongly with the reality, importance, and end of the wonderful works which had been wrought by Jehovah,—which is the name of God in most constant use by the missionaries. Then, after introducing his companion of the estrade, as the traveller whom he had on the last Sunday promised to present to them for this end, he requested they would give as much attention as possible to the account they would hear through his own interpretation, of observations made in these countries. After this, stepping forward to the front of the estrade, I now made a commencement of the novel discourse, while the missionary, with a rod in his right hand, prepared himself to point out on the drawings against the wall, the several countries, provinces, or cities that happened to be named.

I had been somewhat embarrassed among other things, about the order that might be the

most suitable for the delivery of the discourse, considering the manner in which it must necessarily be conveyed, and the character of the audience; but had after some reflection determined to commence with an account of the places in the order in which they severally came under my observation. This appeared to be the simplest as well as easiest method, and the best adapted to our particular purpose. I began, therefore, with Egypt, which I had happened first to visit, and the sites, as far as known, of the events recorded in the Jewish scriptures, from the sale of Joseph by his brethren to the advent of Moses, and the circumstances which led to, and attended, the escape of the Jews from their long captivity. At this break, however, more material as well as more intelligible matter began to introduce itself. We had now the Desert before us, the Red Sea, the places of the encampments of the Jews, Mount Sinai, where alone (in the words of the missionary while commenting upon the events under review) Jehovah ever conversed face to face with the creatures whom he has formed, the approaches to Judea, the Dead Sea, the Jordan, and finally the Holy City.

As these sites of so many memorable incidents came one after the other to be mentioned, the missionary, while conveying to our audience the remarks which it fell to my share to make,

deemed it necessary to recall to their memories, and to comment upon all the greater events of the scriptural history; and what fell from him seemed to impress every one very strongly with the feeling and the interest which he wished to excite. At the same time, as is the custom of the missionaries in all cases when important information is conveyed, in order to insure attention and to ascertain how far what they deliver is understood, Mr. Coan invited his hearers to ask any such questions as the subjects suggested to them, which they did not fail to do. Some of the questions, by Mr. Lyman's youths, when they reached my ear, surprised me by the proofs of intelligence which they afforded, while others, generally from the elder sort, were droll enough. Suffice it, the missionary's purpose was accomplished. New interest was excited in the minds of the natives concerning matters closely connected with the grand objects of the mission, and all parties seemed satisfied.

The missionary then offered up a prayer for the protection of the travellers that were now with them, during the remainder of their journey; after which, the serious business of the day being over, the most decently attired of the men crowded round the estrade, to welcome and shake hands with the traveller, well attesting the clearness with which the missionary had conveyed what he had received, and the impres-

sive manner in which he had commented upon the matters that had been under review.

This little intercourse led to another more familiar tale of travels. I was asked by some of the natives, how I came to these islands; and, upon stating that I was on my passage round the globe, coming from the west, and proceeding always towards the east, several of them were somewhat embarrassed, and wished to be made fully to understand this; upon which Mr. Coan proposed that I should give a rapid little relation of my travels from England to these islands. I shall here, however, only mention, that the subjects that their questions led me most to dwell upon, were chiefly the excessive cold experienced in the northern regions of Asia, the absence of the night during the summer, and the shortness of the day in winter, the travelling on the snow, and the use made of reindeer and dogs. There seemed to be only one thing related to them that they could not comprehend, but it was what has puzzled others, not semi-savages. This was the necessity, which was described to them, that we are under, of adding a day to the calendar after the passage of the meridian of the 180th degree of longitude, to avoid finding ourselves a day before the rest on our arrival at any port on this side that meridian, or in other words, that we have some-

where or other lost twenty-four hours of our time during our travels.

Thus, upon the whole, the day passed off very well; and, trusting that the small share, which was all I perhaps in reality had in the serious business thereof, had contributed in some degree to illustrate the Jewish and early Christian histories, and the objects of Mr. Coan, I felt the satisfaction of having spent a day not in vain.

I shall take this opportunity of mentioning a discourse delivered by Mr. Coan, which I thought remarkable, on account of the reasons, or the apology, which it contained, for the spare use made of the Lord's prayer by the Congregationalists and some other Christian sects. There was a little chapel at Hilo, built at the expense of the mission, expressly for the purpose of attracting the crews of whalers and other ships that put into the bay; and Mr. Coan proposed to perform service here in English, and invited the captain of the whaler that was in the port, and his crew, and all the white folks in the place, to attend. The ship's crew, however, not making their appearance, our number, when assembled, did not reach to ten; upon observing which, the missionary announced that, instead of a proper sermon after the ordinary offices of worship, he would make some familiar remarks upon the Lord's prayer. The discourse, how-

ever, which followed, measured by the dial, and weighed by the character of the matter, was a moderately long and a very eloquent sermon. Its tendency was nevertheless chiefly to explain, as above stated, the reasons for the apparent neglect of the clergy of his Church of the use of this prayer, which the missionary endeavoured to show was not designed to be used in its simple undress, but to be made rather a text upon which to found our longer and more especial petitions. I do not know whether our clergy have any counter-arguments for the excessive use of the same prayer in our Church.

On the 26th of the month, my fellow-traveller and myself embarked on board the same Kamehameha by which I had made the passage from Woahoo to Mowhee. We were accompanied by the two missionaries of Hilo and Mr. Paris, for whom the vessel had been sent to transport them to Honolulu, to attend a meeting of the whole missionary body, and also by Mr. Coan's amiable family. The wind was very light and baffling when we came out of the harbour; but with our taut-rigged and sharp little schooner-yacht, we slipped along the coast even more swiftly than the strangers wished during the day, on account of the novel and agreeable scenery which was constantly in view. All this portion of the island, has evidently been formed at a date long anterior to the southern and

western districts. Here deep ravines, called *gulches* by the inhabitants of the country, divide green sodded hills, attesting the length of time that the winter rains, by which the inequalities were doubtless formed, have run down the hills, and the presence of a fertile soil throughout a great portion of this district of the island. Beyond the higher lands along the coast, appeared ruder shaped hills and steeps, with the scene crowned by the more distant snow-capped summits of Mauna Loa and Mauna Kea.

The wind continued light during the night. In the morning we passed by the village of Whyhio, remarkable on account of the success of the natives in the cultivation of the vegetables introduced by Europeans into the islands. It had a population, we were told, at the commencement of the labours of the mission, of 1000 souls, which was now reduced to between three and four hundred. After this, we passed a remarkably grand ravine or gulch, called Whyanun, and many of the lesser sort, the dark scenery of which was sometimes relieved by the white foaming waters of sparkling torrents. At mid-day we arrived off Mohokona, where we hove to, and received on board the Reverend Mr. Bond, another gentleman of the mission, and his family. After this, we doubled the north-west point of the island, and at sun-set arrived once more at Kailua, which completed our tour round

Owhyhee, since our stay with the governor of the island at this place.

The object of the vessel's touching here was to take on board the Reverend Mr. Thurston, the "Father of the Mission;" but upon communicating with the shore, we found the missionary had already embarked by a native vessel. Thus, as there was a light breeze from the land, we again weighed and put to sea, in the hope of the wind freshening and running us well off shore during the night. Our expectations were, however, disappointed; for the next morning upon coming upon deck, we found we were not above three miles from the land.

The breeze continued light during this day; but as the sun set, we had a last glimpse of the coast of Owhyhee, towards which the two greater strangers of our party looked back with a degree of regret, such as not every land inspires in the breast of a traveller upon so short an acquaintance with its inhabitants. From the time I touched its volcanic shores, arriving by a native vessel,—from the moment of first treading upon the newly-formed land, destined doubtless to see generations of our species rise, flourish and disappear, up to the last hour of our stay, I had felt as if I were transported to another planet, from which it was easy to contemplate, unimpassioned, as it may be one day in our power to do, all the moral and physical changes

that have happened in this our temporary home. The visions of tens of centuries of time past, continually floated in my mind—the rising of the islands, the geological revolutions they have undergone, their first inhabitants, the degrees of progress made by all of our race, from their state either of nature or of degeneracy, from perhaps roaming the forests like the wild beasts, up to the condition of society under which we live. Though the similitude between the Malay race and these islanders indicates, as we have seen, a common origin, yet the bareness of the traits by which this is perceived, shows how far back into the abysm of time we must recoil, before we can connect the people with any one of the grand branches of the great human family; and it is this which gives to every trait in their character, and to every custom of the land, the charm which we experience in our intercourse with those among them who are the farthest removed from the seats of innovation, and all the sad consequences of the too close or too abrupt contact of dissimilar races. Perhaps the condition in which we have seen some of the inhabitants of this particular island, may greatly resemble that of the human race generally, before they formed any other society than that of the family hearth—before even the commonly so-called patriarchal age.

We had light airs during the night, which

ran us past the island of Kahoolawe; and when we came upon deck again in the morning, we were threading the passage between the islands of Lanai and Molokai.

The wind continued light, so that we passed another night at sea, but arrived on the following afternoon at Honolulu, where I now procured a native hut, similar to that in which I had first lodged.

CHAPTER XXII.

HONOLULU.

Visit to the Roman Catholic Bishop—The Bishop's Opinions of the Pope's Flight—His Opinions of the Stability of his Church—French Tolerance—Divisions among the People —Mass to celebrate the Republic in France—The Congregation—Ceremonies incomprehensible to the Natives — Their predominant Impressions — Native Religious Quarrels — Consequences of Confession — Arrival of Russian Ships—Introductions to the King—The Palace —Ceremonies—The Court — Speech of Captain Nievieleskoy—The King's Reply—King's Reply to the Traveller's Speech—Dusky Ladies—My Friends at Honolulu —Otaheitian Wife.

It was my wish, on my return to Woahoo, to proceed immediately to the Society Islands; but, as there was no vessel about to sail in that direction, I was detained here the whole of the month of April. During this time, I chiefly associated with the Europeans of the capital, and can mention but one or two incidents apart from the manner of life which has already been the subject of a previous chapter.

I paid a visit, on one occasion, to the Roman Catholic bishop residing here; but I cannot report a very satisfactory interview. The treatment that the Pope had received so lately in Europe seemed to have soured the good gentleman's disposition; and he was very cautious in his remarks upon that page of his Church's often eventful, and sometimes very droll, history. I consoled him, however, as far as was in my power, for the decline of the temporal and spiritual influence of the head of his Church, by assuring him that I believed all good men in Europe, of every denomination, had approved of Pius IX.'s early measures of amelioration, which, as the Pope could not but have been sincere, I said, I trusted would be pursued with augmented energy upon the first favourable occasion. The countenance of the bishop, which had seemed, as the first part of these words were uttered, to be somewhat improving, before their conclusion presented anything but an amiable expression; and he replied: "Amelioration, sir, is a term which has no application to the Catholic Church. The visible Church is, at present, depressed by the enemies of religion, but its spiritual essence is invulnerable and eternal. Revolutions overthrow or change political institutions, but the Catholic Church remains unshaken amidst the ruins of empires, monarchies, and republics." He candidly, however, informed me, that there

was not a single Christian among all his supposed converts.

It has never been my practice to maintain an argument with any one, upon any subject embraced by the profession of the opposite party, even in the most remote degree. This has always appeared to me to be as impolitic as indelicate, and I bowed, therefore, to the bishop, without exhibiting any disposition to dispute his proposition. Thus, I trust our interview, which lasted but a short time after this, terminated as satisfactorily to him as he could expect. It certainly ended more so to myself than it would have done, had I, after much argument, even thought I had gained a great victory. I will here, however, add a few remarks, to those already made, concerning the establishment of the Romish mission in these islands.

We are not accustomed to hear of French intolerance. For my part I have met Frenchmen in many countries, far and near, besides having a fair acquaintance with them at their own hearths, and I am able to say, that I have met but one intolerable bigot. I speak, however, of men. I have known French women "cast beyond themselves in their opinions," and run into extremes, when unrestrained by the more sober judgment of a papa, or by promises made at the altar of Hymen. I may say, even, that the French gentleman alluded to, who filled the

important office of consul in one of the cities where Islamism triumphs, was far too good for the priests, whether on account of the jealousy which an air of great sanctity might have excited, or from any inconvenient watch he might have kept upon their morals, good or bad, I am not able to say. In these islands, however, the Gallic Church, in the keeping of the French priests, has sinned greatly, both against the temporal and spiritual interests of the people, by its usurpation, and by the opposition of the priests to the system they found established on their arrival. Through their interference, education has been interrupted in many places, the progress of the English language, so essential to the preservation of the native race, has been arrested; and the former social intercourse among the natives has been embittered by the seeds of hatred and contempt of each other, which have been sown among them. The firmest rational advocate of the Romish Church could not approve of the introduction of its dogmas among a simple people, with whom another form of Christianity had just succeeded the gross idolatry of their fathers. It has divided the house against itself, while the boys neglect, or are withdrawn from the means of acquiring, the language which must, at any rate, be ultimately that of the surviving islanders and of the mixed

race. The nearest relations quarrel on account of their religion, and even come to blows in the streets of Honolulu. Perhaps it is not, even now, too late for France to relieve these simple people, in whose welfare she has the same interest as ourselves, from this obstruction to their prosperity, and this most certain means of destroying them.

About this time, the French Consul summoned all his friends, without distinction, to attend the celebration of mass at the Roman Catholic temple, in honour of the proclamation of the republic in France; and I happened to be of their number. As I was desirous of observing the effect of the Romish service upon the natives, as far as appearances at least might go, I made a point of responding to Monsieur Dillon's polite call. On arriving at the appointed edifice, I found a very meagre attendance of the natives, the greater part of whom were women, and only three Europeans had arrived. Two long benches for seats, an accommodation not always to be had in places of Romish worship, were set in front of the estrade before the altar; and upon these the three Europeans had seated themselves, while the natives stood distributed about, gazing on the appendages to Romish forms of worship, apparently with as much curiosity as if they now looked upon them for the first time. There

was no doubt that I had arrived before my time; so I sat down to await the entrance of the rest of the white company.

In a few minutes the principal personage expected, the worthy consul, made his appearance, accompanied by the *chancelier* of the legation and a small retinue; and he was soon followed by several of the king's ministers, the foreign diplomatic agents, and the consul's private friends.

Whether the entrance of these high personages, or whether the hour, were the signal for the commencement of the ceremonies, the bishop, who was to officiate, now entered by a side-door, with his accustomed attendants, bearing the symbols and apparatus for the miracle and mysteries of the mass,

> "—— crosses, relics, crucifixes,
> Beads, pictures, rosaries, and pixes,
> The tools for working out salvation,
> By mere mechanic operation;"

and the good work was commenced.

If there should be any Christians unable to comprehend this, to unaccustomed eyes, most curious mode of worship for any rational creatures to offer to our common Parent, it is fortunately not among the traveller's obligations to enlighten them. I cannot indeed say that, I do not know what the performances before the altar are intended to signify, nor, that I am unac-

quainted with what is understood to be their signification, both among the enlightened classes and the very ignorant, in European countries; but, I declare with the utmost confidence my conviction, after what transpired when the mass was concluded, and one of the white men, well acquainted with the Kanaka tongue, had aided me in conversing with several natives in the church, that not one among them had the smallest conception of the meaning of anything that had passed. The only impression made upon them, indeed, by the whole of their religious education, as far as we were able to discover, was, a strong anti-Christian hatred of their brethren of the elder communion, the consequences of which have already been shown to be so fatal to the whole of the race just turned from the idolatrous practices, and just freed from the tyranny of their ancient system. The only quarrel that I witnessed among the natives during my stay in the islands, was at the door of this temple, between two men of the opposite sects, but not on this occasion. I was passing by, in company with a white resident of the place, when our attention was drawn to these two fellows, who were shaking their fists at each other, and uttering expressions, such as it is always painful to perceive originate in feelings excited by differences in the religious education of the parties. Not that it was possible, that the

words we heard, or the sentiments they conveyed, had been directly taught by the ministers of religion of either sect. It is sufficient, that they confirm many observations previously made, that abundance of the seeds of ill-will and hatred have been sown throughout the land, by the advent of the instructors of the second of the two Christian sects established in the islands, which has much tended to check the progress of civilization generally, and to destroy the best feelings of the people for one another. Among the phrases that we heard these men utter, that might the least offend delicate or shock pious ears, and which reached ours in capital English, were:—"Every one of you Protestants, and every one of you Romanists, will be damned."

Before leaving the temple, I observed half-a-score of women, all passing young, standing at the foot of the altar; and upon inquiry, I found they were waiting the return of the bishop, to confess them. All, I believe, who have marked the steps by which men advance from their primitive condition towards the degrees of refinement more familiar to us, or who have had the opportunity of making observations upon the character of any of our frail species in the stage of society in which we find these islanders, agree in the necessity of raising the condition and advancing the education of the women, as the most essential step towards the reformation

of manners in the society to which they belong. Thus, the obstruction which this great work has encountered in these islands, is not among the least of the evils, which have been sufficiently shown to have arisen out of the presence of rival faiths; for, whatever be the general effects of Romanism; there cannot be a doubt of the evil consequences of the confession upon the delicacy of the female character in this stage of society, and, consequently, upon the moral improvement of the sex, and the general progress of the people.* I was confidently informed indeed, that the progress made in this respect, among even the Protestant women, had been in a great degree negatived by the ill example of the women of the opposed faith wherever Romanism had spread.

The monotonous days of my second sojourn at Honolulu were relieved by one more incident, which, as it will introduce us into the presence of Majesty, itself a piece of good fortune which travellers do not everywhere experience, I must not omit to mention.

On the sixth of the month, a Russian ship entered the port, which, upon boarding her, I found to be the Menchinkoff, belonging to the Russo-American company, and commanded by

* "La nature," says a French moralist, "a donné deux garants de la chastité des femmes, la pudeur et les remords; la confession les prive de l'un et l'absolution de l'autre."

the brother of Captain Rudakoff of the imperial navy, who has been mentioned among my good friends in an earlier section of these travels. A day or two after this, a Russian man-of-war also arrived, which proved to be the Baikal, Captain Nievieleskoy, a friend of General Mouravieff, the governor-general of Eastern Siberia, also mentioned among my friends during my travels in that dreary country.

Up to this time, I had not had the honour of being presented to the sovereign of the islands. The matter, probably, never struck Consul-General Miller. I was able, indeed, to count the principal ministers of his majesty among my friends; but, whether from some little natural doubts about the policy of admitting the too-frequent approach of strangers to the presence of the king, or from mere forgetfulness, I had not had the offer of a presentation. It happened, however, after the arrival of the Russians, that I was more frequently with Mr. Wylie, the minister of foreign relations, in the company of these greater strangers than myself; and my good friend proposed, on a day to be fixed upon for the occasion, to present the two captains, and his countrymen at the same time, to King Kamehameha, in his state apartments in the palace.

On the day appointed, the three foreigners, under the guidance of the minister, appeared at

the gate of the palace. But if the reader of the preceding chapters should have partaken of the smallest portion of the vision of "times long ago betid," with the day-dreams which the traveller enjoyed during his journeys in Owhyhee, he must now return to the "sober certainty of waking" realities, to view the semblance, however wanting in the pomp and circumstance of wealth and power, at least modest, of an European court of this our own good day.

The gate leading to the palace stood wide open as we approached it; and, upon entering, we found about an acre of pleasure-grounds, with a walk up the centre of these bordered with the fine deep-green-leafed kokui and koa trees. After mounting some steps, we were met before the door of the palace by several of the native chiefs belonging to the household of his Majesty, by whom we were led into a broad hall which we found decorated with taste, and in the European style. Here were already assembled several other aspirants to the same honours as ourselves, on some such accounts as the appointments of foreign governments to consular or other dignities, or after an acceptance or change of office.

Upon a table in the centre stood a large vase, and on the walls hung the portraits of Admiral Thomas, and the last King of the French; and, in other parts of the room, were miniature copies

of several of the works of the great Danish sculptor Thorwaldsen.

After some little order had been put in the arrangement for our entrance into the presence, we were led to the throne-room, forming the left wing of the little palace. Here we should have been much struck with the European air of everything around, had we not been prepared for this, after what we had already seen. The state apartment was about the dimensions of, and decorated in the same manner as, one of our middle-class drawing-rooms. But near to one of the side-walls appeared an appropriately decorated armed-chair for a throne. On the left of this stood the King, and next to his Majesty his near relative and heir to the throne, Prince Alexander, a fine youth of about twenty years of age, and next to him Mr. Young, the prime minister, a descendant of the celebrated character in the history of the islands; then, several other of his Majesty's ministers. On the opposite side of the throne stood, first the Queen, and next the prime minister's wife, then, one after the other, all the dusky ladies of the court (among whom there were one or two of a little lighter tint than that of the unmixed native race) reaching full round this wing of the room.

Nothing could exceed the benign and modest countenance of Kamehameha III., when all the strangers stood in front of his throne. The

minister of foreign relations, Mr. Wylie, having already well assorted the party, the ceremonies commenced with the presentation of Captain Nievieleskoy and his officers; upon which the Captain proceeded to read an address to his Majesty, but which, being in the Russian language and understood by none but the Russians present, had to go through several translations before the business of the day proceeded further. It was first rendered into French by the Baron Giesmar, one of Captain Nievieleskoy's officers, and next from the French into English by Mr. Wylie, and finally by Mr. Judd, minister of finance, into the language of the country and the court, in which accent it reached the royal ear; but, how nearly resembling the original I cannot pretend to say: it was afterwards, however, put into print in the English language as follows:

"YOUR MAJESTY—All ships of the Russians, and Russian subjects, have been received with friendship in the ports of your Majesty's islands; wherefore, I, and the gentlemen my officers, do ourselves the honour to appear before your Majesty, offering our thanks, and the assurance that in all the ports of his Imperial Majesty, my Emperor, the subjects of your Majesty will be received with the same marks of friendship.

"I venture to hope that the present friendship will be always a connecting tie between our nations. I take leave of your Majesty, with

the assurance that I shall have the pleasure of representing to my Emperor the friendly reception I have had in your Majesty's dominions."

Upon the conclusion of this address, his Majesty was graciously pleased to return the following reply, which being written and read in the language of the islands, did not reach the Captain's ear in intelligible accents until it had passed through the same threefold translation as the address:—

CAPTAIN NIEVIELESKOY—"I am very glad to see you and your brave officers in my kingdom.

"It has always been my wish and my orders, that Russian officers and their ships, and all on board, should be received and treated with the utmost kindness. The liberal feeling of his Majesty, your great Emperor, to all strangers, is well known to me. His dominions on both continents approach my islands. I desire that the most friendly relations should ever subsist between them and my dominions, and that his Imperial Majesty may long live to reign over his vast Empire, and promote the happiness of the Russian nation.

"When you reach St. Petersburg, you will please me by making known to his Imperial Majesty that these are my sentiments, and that I desire his friendship, while I, with great sincerity, proffer mine."

Lieutenant Rudakoff and Mr. Schmidt of

the Russo-American Company were next presented, both of whom complimented the King upon the condition and progress of his subjects.

After this, came my turn; upon which, I took the opportunity of making my address also, which reached the King's ear through the single translation of Mr. Judd. I informed his Majesty that, after four months stay in his islands, it gave me great pleasure to be able before quiting them, to express the satisfaction I had experienced in observing the progress of his people in such branches of knowledge as form everywhere the true elements of civilization, and, at being able to carry with me the most agreeable recollections of the kindness and hospitality with which I had been received by all his Majesty's subjects, both native and European, with whom I had come in contact. I then dilated a little upon my more particular observations, especially during my travels in Owhyhee, which the foregoing chapters render it unnecessary to repeat in this place.

To this address the King was graciously pleased to make the following reply:—

"I am glad to see you, Mr. Hill. It is my wish that my ministers and all my people should be kind to foreigners. I am glad that they have been kind to you. Were any one to act otherwise, it would be contrary to my commands.

"It is true, I and my people owe much to

the good missionaries. It pleases me to hear you speak so favourably of them—of my islands and my people. As a traveller and man of the world, you will see that much remains to be done; but you will also make the proper allowances for the difficulties I have had to contend with.

"On a small scale, I am endeavouring to do, with the blessing of God, what Peter the Great of Russia did on a large scale. The success I have met with encourages me to go on; and I count upon the sympathy and good will of all friendly nations."

After all the presentations had taken place, pure official ceremony resolved itself into the less restrained intercourse of the levée. My curiosity was greatest about the dusky ladies of the court; and as they alone remained in their original position, stretched out from the right of the throne, around that wing of the room, a good opportunity offered itself to pass along the line, questioning and being questioned from end to end. After all due allowance, however, for the difficulties attending the want of a common tongue, I confess I found, but in one instance, sufficient attractions of person or speech, to be induced to persevere in this dull intercourse. All the ladies, however, I am bound to say, were extremely amiable.

About an hour after we had entered the throne-room, we all bowed to the King and retired.

I had made very frequent visits during my stay at Honolulu, and was indebted for many acts of kindness to all the parties and their families whom I have named at the beginning of this volume. To Mr. Wylie, the Minister of Foreign Relations, who is an English gentleman of uncommon energy of character, and of acknowledged great abilities, I was in a particular manner indebted for other kind offices than those which the opportunity has occurred to mention, during the whole time of my stay in the islands. At the house of Mr. Tirrell, the American Consul, I spent several agreeable evenings. Mrs. Tirrell was an object of great curiosity, on accouut of her having been declared by the Chilians of Valparaiso, where the consul touched on his voyage to the islands, to be the greatest beauty that had yet passed Cape Horn; and, I must say, I have not the least doubt of the correctness of the judgment of the Chilians, albeit themselves not wanting in that agreeable attribute of the fair sex. From the French Consul, Monsieur Dillon, also, and from Madame Dillon, an English lady educated at a convent in France, I was in the same manner indebted.

I was under equal obligations to Mr. Ten Eyk, the United States Commissioner for these islands; and I feel pleasure in here mentioning that upon one occasion that I happened to be at a *soirée* at the house of the commissioner, there were three of the dusky ladies mingled among the wives of the consuls; but, it must be added, not coloured by any of the blood of the race so degraded, and so much despised throughout the Union. Their fine rich olive colour contrasted well with the fair skins of the ladies of the white race, and presented an agreeable variety. One of them was a young Otaheitian, married to a merchant captain who had brought her to this island.

CHAPTER XXIII.

VOYAGE FROM THE SANDWICH ISLANDS TO OTAHEITE.

Departure from Woahoo—Fellow Passenger—Difficulties about making the Passage—Character of our Ship—Crossing the Sun—Crossing the Equator—The Southern Heavens—The North Star—Southern Cross—Prospects of fetching the Island—Making the Land—Magnificent Scenery—Pilot on Board—Harbour and Town of Papiete—Two Ships only here—Bring up—The Town—Visit of Merchants.

At length an opportunity occurred, which enabled me to carry out my wishes of visiting the Society Islands, and completing the passage of the Pacific by continuing my route thence for the coast of South America. The schooner Sola, commanded by a young Swede and manned by Chilians, arrived from the west coast of North America bound to Otaheite and Valparaiso; and I embarked by her on the 5th of the month of May, accompanied by Monsieur Hardy, *Chancelier* of the French Legation at Woahoo.

Some difficulty attends making the passage

from the Sandwich to the Society Islands, which occasionally becomes inordinately long. This is owing to the southern group lying four or five degrees to windward of the northern, which, unless the little variation in the direction of the trade-winds, depending on the season, or proceeding from tempests, or from some other inconstant cause, be in favour of the ship, is a distance too great to fetch on a direct course, even sometimes by the fastest vessels that visit any of the islands. In this case the ship must run to the southward till she falls in with the variables, where she has to make her easting, re-enter the trades, and run down upon the islands to which she is bound. Our Chilian schooner was, however, a clipper, and we hauled dead upon a wind on leaving the port, and had great hopes of fetching the southern group without the necessity of making this circuitous course. Our voyage was short, and scarcely afforded an incident worthy of remembering. I shall very briefly refer, therefore, to such only as served to mark our passage from one hemisphere to the other.

The 8th of the month was memorable in the "travel's history" of the two passengers on board the Sola, in now for the first time finding themselves south of the sun. I had myself been in tropical climes long ere this, but had never before crossed the latitude of the declination of

the sun, whether north or south of the equator, at the time. The star of day, however, was now in north latitude 7° 5′, and the Sola glided over his bright track about noon on this day.

If we are susceptible of lively emotions from the observation of natural phenomena, such as the contemplation of the relations of the beautiful globe we inhabit, with her mightier and lesser rivals in the race of glory assigned to all alike, what a world of reflections does any novelty in these relations, which we seem to experience, create within us! My companion and myself were never tired on our voyage of speculating upon the different systems of the universe, as they are displayed by the great natural philosophers of our respective countries; and we thought we never felt in so favourable a state of mind to appreciate what we had learned.

The day after we crossed the sun's path we caught two aquatic web-footed birds, in form resembling pigeons. They came indeed on board of us, and settled on our deck. They were, in their kind, strangers to all our crew. Their colour was a dusky brown and white, and their voice was not unlike that of the raven, though somewhat less harsh. After keeping them for one night we gave them their liberty, and they soon disappeared.

On the 10th, by our observation of the sun's altitude at noon, we found we were only eleven

miles north of the equator, which we passed over about an hour and a half afterwards.

The change in the face of the heavens at night, is now the chief novelty which falls under the observation of the navigator. As we increased our distance from the line, that star, so remarkable on account of its position in relation to our globe, and its general usefulness to navigators—that sure guide,

> "Of whose fixed and resting quality,
> There is no fellow in the firmament,"

slowly sunk beneath the waters, while the whole face of the heavens gradually assumed an entirely new aspect. The sky of the southern hemisphere, as may be seen in the representation of the heavens upon our little celestial globes, when the several magnitudes of the stars are marked with distinctness, is far less varied and striking than the northern. The famous Southern Cross in the constellation of Centaurus, is perhaps the most remarkable of all the clusters in this hemisphere.

It is not alone the different aspect of the heavens by night, however, but also the change in our relations to the only heavenly body we behold by day, that hourly reminds the traveller after crossing the line of his having passed from one hemisphere to the other. As we sail, or turn our faces, towards the east—to those who are

familiar with the impression from experience, and perhaps to some others, this may seem a trifling circumstance to mention—it is difficult to recognise the same sun we have been accustomed to see on our right hand, now sweeping round from east to west, by apparently a different course from that which he has been wont to take, and reversing the adage adapted only to the northern hemisphere, of turning anything with or against the sun. Nor can we for some time reconcile ourselves to the change which brings us soft airs from the northern quarter of heaven, and rude and cold winds from the southern.

On the 27th, at noon, the island of Otaheite, by our account, bore south-south-west of the position of the ship, distance 245 miles. Thus, as we had a spanking breeze, we were now able to keep away without a doubt about our fetching the group, and with a fair prospect of sighting the principal of them soon after break of day the next morning, in which we were not disappointed. As the day broke, the highest peak of one of the two mountains which wholly form the island of Otaheite appeared above the edge of the water, bearing south-by-west, which, as the trade was steady at east-by-south, enabled us to run down with the wind a-beam.

As we gradually rose the less elevated lands, the island first presented nothing but rugged and

barren rocks and steeps; but as we approached its shores, we observed that these abounded in cocoa-nut groves, and orange-trees. Beyond this, denser forests of deeper tints flourished in the vales or broad ravines towards the interior of the island. Above these were seen steeps and prominences, terminating in a peak, which the navigators of the Pacific call the Crown, though, seen from this point, it rather presented the appearance of a mitre; thus ominous, at least, of the destiny, either civil or religious, or both, of this fair isle.

Two hours before noon we came in sight of the harbour of Papiete, and soon afterwards the capital town of the same name, which is now the place of residence of the French naval governor, as well as of the native Queen, Pomare. A canoe came off to us when we were about three miles from the land, bringing the pilot, a white man, with face and features plainly marking his English origin; and he was not on our deck a second before he informed us that he was the son of the first English missionary to these islands. The wind continued fresh, and as our position was a little to windward of the harbour, we soon reached its entrance, and shot in without accident.

The port of Papiete appears to have several advantages over that of Honolulu at Woahoo. There is more water here at the entrance; and

although the regular trade is not a leading wind to enter, the position of the port is nevertheless such as to allow of its being more easily gained than that of the Sandwich Islands. The town lies east of the entrance of the harbour, and is commanded by a fort which we left on the right hand. As we beat up to the town, we were struck with the desolate appearance of the port, and the little movement on shore, compared with the shipping and the busy scenes at the place we had last left. A single French fruit-vessel lay by the town; and one man-of-war, the frigate Syrene, evidently, from her half-dismantled condition, a guard-ship, was riding at anchor in the broader water.

Upon our bringing up off the town, three or four merchants who inhabited the place came on board. They were all English except one, who was an American. Their chief business was about our cargo, and to learn whether we had any later news from Europe than had reached their island. From them we learned that the French merchant-ship was to sail in three or four days for Valparaiso, and that there was little chance of any other opportunity occurring, by which I might leave for many months, save the vessel by which I came. Thus, I should only have the choice between re-embarking on board the Sola, which it was expected would sail in about ten days, or being

detained in these islands for an indefinite period; so that I determined at once upon limiting my visit to the time of our vessel's stay. What fell under my observation, therefore, during this short time, will not involve the same minute details which more independent movements, and a more protracted sojourn, gave occasion for at the Sandwich Islands.

CHAPTER XXIV.

OTAHEITE.

Discovery of the Island—Quiros—Cook—Society Group—Geological Features—Climate—Population—Character of the Natives—Natural History—Productions—Introduction to the French Governor—Appearance of the Town—English Missionaries—The Rev. Mr. Howe—Dinner at the Government House—The Ladies—Son of Pomare—Scarcity of Luxuries—The Cheremoia—The Governor's Garden—Residence of Pomare—Interview with Natives at Mr. Howe's—A King's Herald—Cruelties under the Ancient System—Effects of the Christian Mission—Predominant feature of the Character of the Natives—Causes—Effects on their Intercourse with Europeans—Inconvenience of Commercial Regulations—A Gascon—Governor's Politeness—Anomalies in the Island.

OTAHEITE, the largest and most important island of the group known by the name of the Society Islands, was first discovered by Quiros, a Spaniard, as early as the year 1606, and called Sagittaria. But it was not until 161 years after this, in the year 1767, that it was seen again by any European. In that year it was visited by Captain Willis, who may be considered its second

discoverer; for it had been so ill described by the Spaniard, that the English navigator was not able to recognize it for the island of Quiros. It was next visited by Captain Cook in 1769, who gave it the proper name by which it was known to the inhabitants, Otaheite, or Tahiti, which it has since borne.

The Society group consists of five islands, and several inconsiderable islets. They are called Otaheite, Eimeo, Meatia, Maiaviti, and Tituaro; and they all lie between the latitudes of 16° 30′ and 17° 54′ South, and the longitudes of 148° and 153° West. The island of Otaheite is the seat of the native government, as well as that of the French since its subjugation. In their proper geological construction, these islands differ more from those of the northern group than in their general features and configuration. Otaheite is formed by two distinct mountains of unequal extent, rising to the height of from 6000 to 8000 feet above the level of the sea, but divided from each other by a low isthmus of about three miles in width. Its circumference has been variously given from 110 to 130 miles. Its coasts are girded by a coral reef from ten to twenty yards in width, at distances, from a dozen yards to two miles from the shore. It has no volcano, nor any remains of craters to indicate their former existence. Nevertheless, there are found everywhere traces of fire, and volcanic

substances stratified, broken, and thrown up in the wildest disorder. Thus it seems not improbable that the islands took their present form after some great geological convulsions, at a remote period, beneath the water, and were subsequently raised to their present position by earthquakes, or by some agency, of the character of which we are not yet acquainted. The volcanic materials found are chiefly basalt, or cellular and doubtless aged volcanic stone. The sides of the raised valleys around the solid mountains are in some places covered with a layer of light earth, and in others with a thick stratum of marl. The less elevated lands around this island are from half a mile to three miles in breadth, and are of extreme fertility. Many valleys on all sides are filled with a rich deposit of alluvial and vegetable soils, which teem with abundance far above anything to be met with in the northern group.

The climate of this group is better than that of the Sandwich Islands. The temperature is steadier; storms are less violent and frequent, and more rain falls throughout the year. The rainy season, which is remarkable, occurs during the same months as in the islands on the opposite side of the equator. Thus the rain falls here in summer instead of winter; or, more properly speaking, when the sun is vertical instead of at his lowest altitude. Some rain, however, falls

here at all seasons, but does not come in storms or endure long, save at the proper rainy season. In other respects the climates of the two groups differ only in there being a little more heat in the southern group, on account of its greater proximity to the equator. The thermometer in summer in this island ranges between 68 and 76 degrees when the sun is north of the line, and between 78 and 86 when it is in south latitude.

The population of Otaheite at the time of Cook was estimated at 200,000. This was probably too high; but for want of other data that might be more relied upon, it must be accepted as approximating the truth. The diseases, however, introduced by Europeans in the group, wars, the use of ardent spirits, infanticide, and other vices common to the infancy of society, or arising out of the contact of the aboriginal race with white men, became so destructive in their effects, that at the time of the arrival of the first missionaries in 1797, the population is said to have been under 20,000, and, twenty years after this, not to have been above 5000. But about the year 1820 or 1821 the births were found to have become equal to the deaths; and, since that time, they have so much increased under the influence of the new religion upon the morals generally of the natives—but especially in the total abolition of infanticide—that the popula-

tion, which is still increasing, has again already reached 20,000.

The men are generally a fine race, above the middle stature of Europeans. The women are slight and disproportionately tall. Their colour is a full shade lighter than that of the Sandwich Islanders, notwithstanding the nearer approach of this group to the equator. In mental capacity the missionaries report favourably of them, judging partly from the facility with which they acquire general knowledge, but also by the character of the historical songs extant among them, and the aptitude which they also, as with the inhabitants of the northern group, are supposed to display in arithmetical calculations.

These islands seem to have been more favoured than any others of the Pacific, in their native irrational inhabitants, especially of the winged tribes. Among the lakes in the interior were found several kinds of heron, wild ducks, some of the woodpecker tribe, and also paroquets of very beautiful plumage. Among their few singing birds, the most remarkable is called by the natives Omaomao. In its appearance, and in its note, this bird resembles the thrush. Even domestic fowls were found here. Hogs and dogs were the only quadrupeds; but, since the missionaries arrived, horses, sheep, black cattle, and goats have been introduced. The goats alone, however, I believe, have thrived.

As it was late when we anchored, I remained on board the Sola for the night; but early the next morning Mr. Gibson, the merchant to whom our vessel was consigned, called on board to offer to present me to the French Governor of the island, Monsieur l'Amiral Lavaud. On our landing, I observed a slovenly mixture of native huts, formed chiefly of poles set upright in the ground, and houses of wood constructed in the European style, placed fronting the water, and forming a street running parallel to this in their rear. The governor's house stood at the end of a lawn of about 100 yards in length, beyond the street formed by the European houses, with the palace of Pomare (a boarded cottage something better than the ordinary huts of the natives) on its right. We found the Admiral at home, and I met a polite and hospitable reception, with an obliging offer of aid in anything I might wish to undertake during my stay in the island.

From the Government-house, we set off to look for some kind of lodgings in which I might take up my temporary abode. After a long search, however, we found nothing of the kind in the place; so that I was obliged to make arrangements with the Captain of our vessel, to remain on board during our short stay.

My next step was to call on the English missionaries residing here, the Reverend Mr.

Howe and the Reverend Mr. Thomson, by both of whom I was also very politely received. The next morning I breakfasted with Mr. Howe, accompanied by the master of our vessel, who was as remarkable for his piety, as most sailors are for their indifference to the forms at least of any of the various religious sects with which the ports throughout the world, wherever the English language prevails, abound. Mr. Howe, seemed to me to be a gentleman eminently adapted for the sacred duties in which he was engaged. Before we sat down to our morning repast, he offered up a prayer that might have been made by one of any creed, that happened to be present, ending with a touching supplication to the Omnipotent, for the continued protection of the travellers now under his roof.

On the second day after my arrival, I had the honour of dining with the Admiral. There were present on the occasion, Madame Lavaud, and two other French ladies, relatives of the family, which comprised, I believe, all the white women in the island, except the wives of the missionaries. There were also, the Commander of the troops, the Admiral's private secretary, and my travelling companion, Monsieur Hardy; and, if mentioned the last, not the least in rank, a prince of the blood royal of the island, the son of Pomare, and heir to the shadow of a throne upon which his mother still sits, but now a kind

of spoiled child of the Admiral, who condescended to feed his highness with a spoon. The little prince had been named Joinville.

We had a sort of Franco-Tahitian repast, in relation to the viands, yet spare in dishes, at least of solids, which were wholly of the flesh of birds, such as ducks and fowls, raised from French importations (there being neither beef nor mutton now in the island), and some very indifferent vegetables. At our dessert, however, besides all the fruits mentioned as abounding in the Sandwich Islands, we had the most delicious of all the productions of the Pacific, and perhaps of the world, the Cheremoia. I had heard, while I was in the northern group, of the estimation in which this was held throughout the Pacific. I was not therefore wholly taken by surprise when I tasted it. I cannot compare it, in point of flavour, to any other fruit with which I am acquainted. I believe, several among the most tempting to the eye, and the most delicious in flavour, of the various productions of the tropical climes, have at least received the name of that fatal fruit that one "rash hand in evil hour," gathered, when

> "Nature from her seat
> Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe
> That all was lost."

But I do not know whether any of the unfor-

bidden fruits of the same garden are supposed to have been discovered in our blighted earth. I am sure, however, that there can be none with a higher claim than the Cheremoia, to have first grown, and to have been first gathered in Paradise, beyond the walls of which, we may easily believe, the fatal tree that stood in the midst of the garden never propagated its kind. This Cheremoia is about the size of a large orange, and is round in form, with a thin skin, and when ripe, is of the consistence of a thoroughly mellow pear.

We found the Governor a frank, plain sailor; and there was no constrained ceremony at his table. The conversation was general, gay, and agreeable; and the ladies were especially amiable. As soon as the dinner was over, we retired to a garden which had been planted behind the house, where, over our coffee, we indulged in the lighter sort of table-talk; after which his excellency led us round his grounds, comprising two or three acres laid out in beds of flowers and shrubs, and teeming with excess of vegetation of the clime, half wild and half trained. The most remarkable of the plants we observed here were two Norfolk Island pines, not less beautiful in their forms, than precious on account of their novelty among the shrubs of the sun's tropical beams.

At the upper end of the garden there

was a fresh spring oozing from a break in the solid rock which bounded the garden, whence the water was conducted to the Government Wharf, to supply such shipping as entered the port. It appeared as if it were a new source; for there was no appearance of a natural water-course, which could not fail to have been formed wherever there had been water long running.

A paling only divided these grounds from the garden in which stood the palace of Queen Pomare, before mentioned, near which there was one of the ordinary native huts, with walls formed of sticks, in the same manner as in some parrots' cages; which, indeed, the huts of the Otaheitians very much resemble. This method of building, at least, supersedes the necessity for windows. In the evening we played billiards, in which almost sole amusement that the place affords for Europeans, the ladies joined us.

I paid a short visit to the officers of the Syrene, on board their ship, soon after our arrival in the port, and was very politely received. There appeared to be another French ship of war belonging to the place, but she was at this time at the Marquesas, whence she had lately proceeded to bring back some stores left there, in consequence of the French government having, after the conquest of those islands, determined to abandon them.

I was frequently at the houses of both the

English missionaries during my stay here. One evening that I was at Mr. Howe's, two or three native families came in for the express purpose of having some conversation with their instructor's countryman, so lately arrived; and as Mr. Howe, like the chief missionary of the northern group, was fond of conversing on subjects connected with the Holy Land, we were soon engaged, over the map of the globe, in pointing out the sites of the most memorable events in the history of Judaism and Christianity.

This time, however, our pupils were very dull, and were on some points incredulous; so that we did not pursue our lecture very far. Their incredulity, indeed, was not confined to the subjects upon which Mr. Howe was most desirous of instructing them. Among other things, they would not believe that the great continents we showed them delineated upon the map had any real existence. One very sage fellow, when the little figure Otaheite made in the vast ocean in which it was placed, was pointed out to him, said: "It could not be a fair representation; and that the pride of those who made the map had caused them to show this island so small, that it might appear less than their own country."

On another occasion when I was at the missionary's, I met an old chief called Oharohee, who much excited my interest, on account of

the part he had played in the last king's service, under the old system, before the introduction of Christianity, or, at least, before its influence had been in any degree felt. He appeared to be a very sincere convert, at this time, and was much respected by Mr. Howe and his family; and though the part he had acted must have been accompanied with the ferocity that attends only the highest degree of fanaticism and the greatest crimes, there remained no visible traces of a savage disposition upon his aged features. He did not exactly know his age; but he perfectly remembered the last visit of Cook, in 1777; and as he said he did not then wear the maro, which it was the custom of the people of these islands to put on at twelve years of age, he was, probably, at this time, about 84. He did not appear to me, however to be above 74 or 75. His ancient employment was near the person of the king, whom he served as a kind of herald of the chief's dread approach to any island or any village when he travelled, and to procure human sacrifices whenever, and for whatsoever, they were required.

These cruelties, more or less terrible, accompanied the royal steps wherever they were directed, but especially when the king visited any of the islands in which he did not reside, and at his return. This mighty prince never landed, after embarking, until five or six of his

subjects had been slaughtered and stretched out on the beach for him to tread upon as he stepped on shore. It was the custom of the herald to land from his canoe, while the king's canoe and the little fleet that usually accompanied her remained upon their paddles. He carried in his hand a stone; and several attendants accompanied him as he marched from the beach to the huts before which he landed. Upon entering any one of these, he was sure to find all its tenants seated on their mats in patient expectation of their fate. He merely said, in the language of his country, as he entered: "I want a broken calabash," and then proceeded to break the sculls of one or two of the men, one after the other; and as he met no opposition, he thus easily procured the number the occasion required. But I must not omit to mention that this once dread herald of a savage chief's will, and the instrument of his cruelties, now the sole living evidence of this former sad condition of the islanders, related his tale with evidently unaffected pain; and, when all he had said had been communicated to me, he desired of the missionary that he would not omit to inform me also, that whenever these passages of his former life occurred to his mind, they made him very unhappy; but that he was consoled in the assurance given him by his instructors, that as his acts were done in ignorance, if his repent-

ance were sincere, they would be forgiven him in the future life.

After Mr. Howe had communicated all this to me, he repeated, in a very impressive manner, the assurances he had often before given this native; and the now Christian man recovered from the gloom that his countenance had expressed while telling his tale.

The condition of the Otaheitians has been much healthier than that of the natives of the northern islands, even since the arrival of the French and the introduction of new diseases among them. This may be attributed chiefly to their manner of constructing their dwellings, which being open, as before described, have none of the inconveniences attributed to the grass huts of Sandwich Islanders during the rainy season.

The most prominent feature in the character of the Otaheitians appears to be their love of indolence, in which the too great bounty of nature has permitted them to indulge. They seem to have been hitherto an exception to the common law of nature, which has seemed everywhere else to have imposed toil in a greater or less degree upon all men. Their magnificent valleys abound not alone in luxuriant forests that attract and charm the eye, but also in trees bearing sufficient food to supply all their proper wants. The trees which produce the bread-fruit, the banana, the orange, the cocoa-nut,

and the cheremoia, seem to contend with one another for the palm of superior strength and beauty, and for the quantity of their spontaneous abundance.

The hogs of these islands resemble those of the Sandwich group, require no care, and feed upon fruits which might exempt their flesh from the curse of impurity, under which it ought, perhaps, to lie everywhere else. And as to fish, with these also their coasts supply them at the price of no more labour than might be called pastime.

The disposition and character of the Otaheitians are said to have much changed since the late conquest of the islands. I saw nothing of that cheerfulness about them which is so remarkable in the natives of the northern group; and it is certain that the circumstances which attended their recent subjection are far from passing from their memories. They are found to have the same deficiency as the Sandwich Islanders in their capacity to carry out designs which they are led, by their imitation of Europeans, to commence. Many plans and foundations of houses have been laid down by the chiefs: but, I believe, no one has been followed up until the dwellings have been completed. The same error, as it appears to me, has been made here by the mission, as in the Sandwich Islands: that of teaching through a medium

quite insufficient for the ends proposed. This, however, will be the same wherever the mission is wholly for religious purposes, unaccompanied by the teachers of some European language, and unsupported by instructions in the most useful arts, by means better adapted to the ends to be attained than those which have been hitherto tried.

I made several excursions, on foot, in the vicinity of the town, and entered many of the native huts, accompanied by Mr. Howe; we found them generally well supplied with necessaries. Dried fish hung about the walls, or above our heads, and abundance of the fruits already mentioned among the products of the islands, more especially the plantain, lay strewed upon the ground. The greatest difference in the manner of living of the inhabitants of the two groups appeared to be in the character of their huts, which leads me to refer again to the evident effects of different modes of constructing habitations upon the health and constitutions of men. The greatest advantage would, undoubtedly, arise from the missionary societies, and, perhaps, from all societies that have any influence upon the destinies of the poorer classes everywhere, taking measures to cause the principles of the art to be applied to all the circumstances of climate and the materials at hand. We have seen how wholly insufficient for the

wants of the natives are the huts constructed with grass in the Sandwich Islands, since the change of manners and the prevalence of many new diseases in that group; and nothing can more plainly show the good grounds that exist for the adoption of the measures above recommended, than the undoubted fact that the population of these islands, lodged in open huts constructed of mere poles as already described, is actually on the increase, although exposed to the same inconveniences attending their sudden change of manners, and their abrupt contact with Europeans, as the inhabitants of the northern group. In a word, the greatest necessity exists of adapting the dwellings of men to the changes introduced among them, wherever those in which they originally lived are not found sufficient to meet all the consequences of their altered condition.

On the evening of the 1st of June I had notice that our ship would be ready for sea at an early hour on the following day. Upon this, my fellow-traveller and myself called to take leave of the Admiral and Madame Lavaud, to whom we were both indebted for unaffected kindness and hospitality. On our return, however, to the port, we found that the captain of the Sola had discovered, to his great surprise and regret, that the rules of the place, with which he had not made himself acquainted,

required that he should give forty-eight hours' notice before sailing. But the officer in authority was a Gascon; and if we might judge from the character which his compatriots of the same department have obtained, the least likely of men to be inexorable. We therefore determined to take advantage of this circumstance in our favour; and, by engaging him in a cross-fire of gibes, such as were known to suit an inhabitant of the province where wit, good-humour, and the best dispositions are said to have found the most congenial soil in all France, we even so far gained our purpose as to prevail upon him to go himself to the Governor to ask permission to allow us to depart.

The Gascon, whether by the force of his wit, or more solid reason, soon gained the Governor and returned; and, early on the morning of the 2nd, aided by the boats of the Syrene, which the captain of the frigate, on observing that we had not wind enough to leave the harbour, very politely sent to our assistance, we took our departure from the island of Otaheite.

Upon the whole, the impressions I retained after we left this fair isle, and I think I may say those also of my fellow-traveller, had less of the agreeable in them to counterbalance the dark pictures which the condition of a declining race must ever exhibit, than those which we retained of the Sandwich Islands. The memory, there-

fore, of what had the latest fallen under our observation, was not much calculated to relieve the anticipated tediousness of the long voyage now before us. Everything that has been introduced which seems proper to the intercourse between the white man of the European race and his less fortunate brethren of the Pacific isles, appeared unsubstantial and transient to us; while the darker phases of the contact were too deeply impressed upon our minds, to enable us to dwell with satisfaction upon such little hopes as may remain of the regeneration of the native race.

Anomalies the most anomalous, both physical and moral, strike the stranger in a particular manner in this island. A simple race of men, just turned from their idolatrous worship and their degrading superstitions, by the efforts of one European people, checked in their progress by the conquest of their country by another European people, and exposed to an attempt to change their faith by means unworthy of the tolerant spirit of the conquerors as a nation, and probably even without the assent of their Government—an isle under European military rule, declared an independent kingdom under a necessary protectorate—a port said to have been established for the refuge and protection of the ships of all nations, subjected to such regulations as to oblige even the very whalers of the protecting power, as it has happened, that formerly fre-

quented it, to take shelter in other harbours in other islands—a population composed of one of the finest races, physically speaking, found upon the face of the globe, sickening amidst the superabundance of the native productions of the soil, and in the healthiest of climates.

Whatever may be the result of the moral changes taking place in the sister group, and whether the half-wild man perish or regenerate, every thing is there open and what it seems, and creditable to the Europeans, ever struggling, if not against a universal law, certainly against a very common ordinance of nature, by which men in the infancy of society perish upon the advent of men in a condition in advance of them. It would be far better for the Otaheitians, for France, and for all other countries interested in the welfare of the natives of the Pacific, were the anomalies just spoken of to cease. Were France to give the Otaheitians again their independence, and were the three great maritime nations to agree to respect this, and equally furnish a commissioner to aid the establishment of such a government and laws as the example in the sister group would afford the best means of doing, justice would at least be rendered to the population of the Society Islands, with the fairest prospect of great benefit to all the countries of the Pacific, as well as to all the maritime nations. Nothing could be easier for the French, than to

find other islands in this wide ocean, on every account far better suited than these for their establishment, and where they might begin the race of conversion or civil progress in the manner most in accordance with their own institutions or their inclination, and where their efforts would be more likely to be aided than otherwise, by the other European nations established on the coasts, or on any of the islands of the great ocean. There were two priests here at this time; but I do not believe they met any encouragement, even by their government, beyond the habitations of their own countrymen of the garrison; and they had not yet made a single convert among the natives throughout the islands.

CHAPTER XXV.

VOYAGE FROM OTAHEITE TO VALPARAISO.

Leaving the Island—First Objects to attain—Bad Weather—Pot au noir—Return of fine Weather—The Variables—Cape Pigeons—Island of Turnbull—Island of Juan Fernandez—Change of Weather—First View of the Land—Gale—Magnificent View of the Andes—Arrival at Valparaiso.

On leaving any of the islands within the tropics, if the ship be bound to the eastward, her first object is to gain the variables; and if the port from which we set sail be situated, like that of Papiete, upon the opposite side of the island to that of the latitudes we must first attain, it becomes a question, whether we should attempt to beat up to windward until we clear the island, or run to leeward, which is commonly decided by the state of the wind in regard to the little variation that the trades admit. Thus, after marking well the direction of the wind, and consulting the pilot who brought us out of port, our cap-

tain determined to put the vessel before the wind, so that we were soon threading the passage between the islands of Otaheite and Eimeo; and early the same afternoon we were sufficiently advanced to haul close upon a wind, with a moderate breeze and a favourable prospect of soon reaching the latitudes in which the variables prevail at this season.

The voyage upon which we were now embarked, was attended with few incidents worthy of noting. The war of the elements, with the description of which this volume commenced, no more came to supply anything sufficiently novel to dwell upon; and nothing within the narrow confines of our bulwarks supplied the place of what might have been new or important beyond them. The report of this voyage then, which the plan of this narrative nevertheless demands, will be confined to a few remarks upon some circumstances characteristic rather of the latitudes we were navigating, than peculiar to our own experience.

The wind that had run us so rapidly off the land, failed in the evening; and when the rays of the too-bright tropical sun of full day, were softened by the approach of the great source of light to the bourn of his day's travel, we could plainly see the high peaks of Otaheite, at the distance by the reckoning of 45 or 50 miles. We had several hours of calm, and of light

winds, during the night, as is commonly the case in the tropical latitudes, where the wind almost always commences in the morning, and increases from hour to hour, till after the sun has long passed the meridian, and declines again on his approach to the horizon where he sets.

We were told by the French naval officers before leaving Otaheite, that we should certainly not reach the variables without passing through the bubbling turmoil of a "*pot au noir.*" I do not know whether our officers have any equivalent for this expression; but I will record what we experienced, as a feature in the character of the latitudes between the limits of the variables and the trades.

On the 5th of the month the wind, which had been blowing fresh during the day, died away more rapidly than usual after the sun had attained the meridian. By four o'clock it was calm; but the swell, which from the time we quitted the islands had been regular, was now observed running in opposite directions. Upon this we had not a doubt of our being about to experience the weather, against the consequences of which the warning of the French officers had caused us to be prepared. By five o'clock the sun was obscured, and dark and thick clouds seemed meeting each other from almost all points of the compass, and rain was seen falling in several directions. Soon after this, the lightning flashed

around us, and the thunder cloud broke over our heads with a crash that was worthy of the stormiest latitudes that the sun's beams illumine. There was not, however, a breath of air upon the water, for nearly another hour, when a squall from the north broke suddenly upon us, driving the irregular swell before it for a short time, and then giving place to a wind of equal force in the opposite direction, which redoubled the size and violence of the waves.

This uncertain and troubled state of the elements, this "*pot au noir*," continued during the day, and throughout the first watches of night; but by eight bells the next morning, the weather had assumed its wonted serenity; and, although the sea was still too high and irregular to admit of our carrying much sail, we were now steering our course for the coast of America, with a spanking and steady breeze from the north-west.

The day after that of the "*pot au noir*," we made our first acquaintance with the species of winged tribes called cape pigeons by the navigators of these regions. Two or three only first joined company with us, rather than visited us; but their numbers augmented as we proceeded.

They are not misnamed. They very much resemble the wood-pigeon, but are somewhat larger and rounder. They are perhaps the tamest of the ocean birds, and become quite

companions to the seamen, who frequently feed them alongside; and, they follow a ship sometimes for many thousands of miles, certainly without finding any place to take their natural rest, save the surface of the agitated sea.

On the evening of the 7th, we passed in sight of the island of Turnbull, which appeared to be but a huge and scarce habitable rock. This and several other islands scattered about near it, are said to produce nothing whatever save cocoa-nuts, upon which their spare number of inhabitants wholly subsist. The merchants established at, or trading to Otaheite, send vessels here to purchase the oil of this fruit, which they obtain in abundance.

From this to the 29th of the month, we were running continually with the wind from north-west to south-west, but it was more frequently north-west, answering of course to the south-west of our hemispheres, and with exceedingly fine weather, and at the rate of nine or ten knots an hour. But nothing could have less interest than this long equality of the elements. We almost longed for something like a storm. Our sole resource was conversation ; and this was much less than it might have been, owing to the habits of my French companion, who was so great a hater of the sea, that he turned in and slept exactly half the day in addition to the

night, that he might seem the sooner to get rid of the time.

We were early on this day, by the reckoning, abreast of, and very near the island of Juan Fernandez, so famous on account of its having given rise to the story which is, perhaps beyond every other, the most indelibly engraven on our minds from our earliest years. It was our misfortune, however, to be very uncertain whether we even saw the island or not. The weather had suddenly changed during the night, in a manner known to seamen to indicate the vicinity of elevated land. We seemed to be sailing into some new region. Dark and loaded clouds concealed the heavens, hanging around us, and intercepting our view on all sides. But for a few minutes in the afternoon, the winds that appeared one moment struggling for empire above our heads, and the next, allayed by the equality of the strength of the opposed currents of air, seemed to cause the clouds sufficiently to divide, to show us any very high land there might be in some directions. The island at this moment by our account bore ten miles only south of us; and as we watched for some indication of its existence, various forms of peaks and lofty promontories, which appeared almost directly above our heads, seemed to be breaking and dividing the clouds that passed by them.

It remained uncertain, however, whether we were looking upon clouds of varied density and unequal motion, or upon the solid land; though the next day, when the weather was fine after an observation of the sun, we found, as near as we could calculate, that we had passed within five miles of the shores which bound the rocky steeps of the famous Juan Fernandez. About this time, we saw the first of Mother Carey's chickens, so common in these latitudes in the Atlantic.

On the 1st of July, as we came near the land of the continent, we had a return of the same thick weather we experienced off the island of Juan Fernandez. It rained heavily all day, and at sunset we supposed we were within forty miles from the shore. The wind, however, being from the northward, we kept on our course under easy sail. But about an hour before the break of day, the seamen on the watch believed they heard the sea falling upon rocks, which induced us to tack. After this we had an increase of wind, and the glass fell very low, which warned us to prepare for a storm.

During all the next day we were standing off to sea, under storm-staysails; but the weather moderating at sunset, enabled us again to run in for the land. The night was clear; and the morning presented us with a first view of

the firm earth; and such a scene, while the day broke upon the mountains now in sight, as my imagination, I confess, had never painted—my conception of what I had read, whether in verse or prose, never reached. I shall by a mere enumeration of the natural objects which came under our view, instead of dwelling upon the ecstasies we experienced, endeavour to give some idea of the magnificent spectacle we beheld.

As soon as it was light, the captain, who had been upon deck ever since the ship tacked, sent to his French and his English passenger to inform them that land was in sight; upon which we arose with the usual eagerness of travellers on board ship to gladden our eyes once more with the welcome view of the firm earth. On our reaching the deck, the ship was standing to the northward with a light breeze from the east, in which direction the land appeared. A dark blue uneven line of distant mountains, extending far north and south, broke the monotony of the unvarying horizon which the mere ocean at all times presents, and was rendered the more apparent by a faint light already seen in the sky, and forming the background of the picture just opening to our view.

As we stood observing the gradual increase of light in the same direction, other mountains of a slightly darker shade seemed developing their outlines beneath those which had first

appeared, as if they formed the base which supported the vast range beyond them, the highest *Cordillera* of the mighty Andes. But as the moments passed, and the light increased, the scene began to present quite a different phase. The entire of the unequal line was now brilliantly gilded from north to south, while the lighter and darker shades of the nearer hills discovered to us the relative distances at which we beheld all that our sight embraced. But there came yet another change, which, indeed, presented us with a spectacle that entranced our senses and filled us with emotions such as the consciousness of the presence of some superior power might alone excite. As the bright orb that had thus heralded his near approach was himself seen rising above the most distant mountain summits, with a direct ray not so bright as to dazzle the eye of the spectator, while his oblique beams illumined and turned every object upon which they fell to colours varying from violet to that of glittering gold, we seemed to perceive the hand of Nature directing the movements of globes newly created, in all the varied relations it was designed they should bear to one another. The summits of the higher *Cordillera*, along their whole extent, hardly yielded in brightness to the great orb that enlightened them, plainly indicating that they were capped

with their perpetual snows, while the various modifications of the parent colour shaded all the mighty succession of mountains upon mountains that the eye compassed. At the same time, the full moon, a little less brilliant than the cold satellite is wont to appear in the complete absence of the sun, hung suspended a few degrees above the great abyss, in the opposite quarter of the heavens, completing the picture, and contrasting the softened shades of the departing night with the gaudy presence of day.

This most magnificent of all the natural scenes which had ever come under the view of any one who now beheld it, began to grow duller and duller as the sun increased his distance from the terrestrial objects which his beams first gilded, until nothing remained but the blue outlines of the mountains, now too equally enlightened to exhibit any peculiarity in their forms.

The light airs that had prevailed, died away early in the day; and after a short interval of calm, a breeze sprung up from the west, which being dead on shore, enabled us to run in for the port of Valparaiso, which, by observation of the sun, we found to lie due west of us.

As we approached the shore at our wonted spanking rate of sailing, other high lands, which had been beneath the horizon when the sun rose,

seemed rapidly rising out of the ocean, while the distant mountains appeared gradually sinking behind these, till they became obscured from our view. At length, about an hour before dark, we reached the entrance of the port, when the breeze drawing out, obliged us to haul our wind and attempt to beat in. A very little was yet to be seen of the town, which appeared to be placed near the centre of a deep amphitheatre of sterile or not very productive land.

We had scarce a hope of getting into safe anchorage before the day closed, until a circumstance deemed favourable to our prospects was observed by the seamen. The aquatic birds, called cape pigeons, which joined us as we entered the variables, had followed us all the voyage, augmenting their number daily, until they amounted, at the time of our arrival, to about a hundred; and they had become so tame as almost to take biscuit from our hands. But now, as if the land we were about to set our feet upon were as much an object of dread to them as of joy to us, they all suddenly took their departure, flying towards the north; upon which the whole crew, who had been watching for their departure, proclaimed this to be the sign of the termination of their labours, and a full assurance of our being able to anchor before dark, in which we were not disappointed. The wind, indeed,

almost immediately again favoured us, and soon after sunset we shot in among a fleet of shipping riding at anchor in the bay; but, as it was against the rules of the port for any one to land after that time, we were forced to remain on board until the morning.

APPENDIX.

DECLARATION OF RIGHTS, BOTH OF THE PEOPLE AND CHIEFS.

God hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on the earth, in unity and blessedness. God has also bestowed certain rights alike on all men and all chiefs, and people of all lands.

These are some of the rights which he hath given alike to every man and every chief of correct deportment; life, limb, liberty, freedom from oppression, the earnings of his hands and the productions of his mind, not however to those who act in violation of the laws.

God has also established governments, and rule, for the purposes of peace; but in making laws for the nations, it is by no means proper to enact laws for the rulers only, without also providing protection for their subjects; neither is it proper to enact laws to enrich the chiefs only, without regard to enriching their subjects also; and hereafter there shall by no means be any laws which are at variance with what is above expressed, neither shall any tax be assessed nor any service or labour required of any man, in a manner which is at variance with the above sentiments.

Protection for the People declared.

The above sentiments are hereby published for the purpose of protecting alike, both the people and the chiefs of

all these islands, while they maintain a correct deportment; that no chief may be able to oppress any subject, but that the chiefs and people may enjoy the same protection, under one and the same law.

Protection is hereby secured to the persons of all the people, together with their lands, their building-lots, and all their property, while they conform to the laws of the kingdom, and nothing whatever shall be taken from any individual, except by express provision of the laws. Whatever chief shall act perseveringly in violation of this Constitution, shall no longer remain a chief of the Hawaiian islands, and the same shall be true of the governor, officers, and all land agents.

But if any one who is deposed should change his course, and regulate his conduct by law, it shall then be in the power of the chiefs to reinstate him in the place he occupied previous to his being deposed.

Constitution.

It is our design to regulate our kingdom according to the above principles, and thus seek the greatest prosperity of all the chiefs and all the people of the Hawaiian islands. But we are aware that we cannot ourselves alone accomplish such an object—God must be our aid, for it is His province alone to give protection and prosperity. Wherefore we first present our supplication to Him, that he will guide us to right measures, and sustain us in our work. It is therefore our fixed decree,

I. That no law shall be enacted that is at variance with the word of the Lord Jehovah, or at variance with the general spirit of His word. All laws of the islands shall be in consistency with the general spirit of God's law.

II. All men of every religion shall be protected in worshipping Jehovah, and serving Him according to their own understanding; but no man shall ever be punished for ne-

glect of God, unless he injure his neighbour or bring injury on the kingdom.

III. The law shall give redress to every man who is injured by another without a fault of his own, and shall protect all men while they conduct themselves properly, and shall punish all men who commit crime against the kingdom, or against individuals, and no unequal law shall be passed for the benefit of one to the injury of another.

IV. No man shall be punished unless his crime be first made manifest; neither shall he be punished unless he be first brought to trial in the presence of his accusers, and they have met face to face, and the trial having been conducted according to law and the crime made manifest in their presence, then punishment may be inflicted.

V. No man or chief shall be permitted to sit as judge or act on a jury to try his particular friend (or enemy) or one who is especially connected with him—therefore, if any man be condemned or acquitted, and it shall be afterwards made to appear that some one who had tried him acted with partiality for the purpose of favouring his friend or injuring his enemy, or for the purpose of enriching himself, then there shall be a new trial allowed, before those who are impartial.

Exposition of the Principles on which the Present Dynasty is Founded.

The origin of the present government and system of polity is as follows :—Kamehameha I. was the founder of the kingdom, and to him belonged all the land from one end of the islands to the other, though it was not his own private property. It belonged to the chiefs and people in common, to whom Kamehameha I. was the head, and had the management of the landed property. Wherefore, there was not formerly, and is not now, any person who could or can convey away the smallest portion of land, without the

consent of the one who had, or has, the direction of the kingdom.

These are the persons who have had the direction of it from that time down—Kamehameha II., Kamehameha I., and, at the present time, Kamehameha III. These persons have had the direction of the kingdom down to the present time, and all documents written by them, and no others, are the documents of the kingdom.

The kingdom is permanently confirmed to Kamehameha III. and his heirs, and his heir shall be the person whom he and the chiefs shall appoint, during his lifetime; but should there be no appointment, then the decision shall rest with the chiefs and House of Representatives.

Prerogatives of the King.

The prerogatives of the king are as follows:—He is sovereign of all the people and all the chiefs. The kingdom is his. He shall have the direction of the army and all the implements of war of the kingdom. He also shall have the direction of the government property—the poll-tax—the land-tax—the three days' monthly labour, though in conformity to the laws. He shall also retain his own private lands, and lands forfeited for the non-payment of taxes shall revert to him.

He shall be the chief judge of the supreme court, and it shall be his duty to execute the laws of the land, also all decrees and treaties with other countries; all, however, in accordance with the laws.

It shall also be his prerogative to form treaties with the rulers of all other kingdoms; also to receive ministers sent by other countries, and he shall have power to confirm agreements with them.

He shall also have power to make war in time of emergency, when the chiefs cannot be assembled; and he shall be the commander-in-chief. He shall have power to transact

all important business of the kingdom which is not by the law assigned to others.

Respecting the Premier of the Kingdom.

It shall be the duty of the king to appoint some chief of rank and ability to be his particular minister, whose title shall be *Premier of the Kingdom.* His office and business shall be the same as that of Kamehameha I. and Kamehameha II. For even in the time of Kamehameha I. life and death, condemnation and acquittal, were in the hands of Kamehameha. When Kamehameha died, his will was, *The kingdom is Liholiho's, and Kaahumanu is his minister!* That important feature of the government, originated by Kamehameha I. shall be perpetuated in these Hawaiian Islands, but shall always be in subserviency to the law.

The following are the duties of the premier:—All business connected with the special interests of the kingdom, which the king wishes to transact, shall be done by the premier, under authority of the king. All documents and business of the kingdom executed by the premier shall be considered as executed by the king's authority. All government property shall be reported to him (or her), and he (or she) shall make it over to the king.

The premier shall be the king's special councillor in the great business of the kingdom.

The king shall not act without the knowledge of the premier, nor shall the premier act without the knowledge of the king, and the veto of the king on the acts of the premier shall arrest the business. All important business of the kingdom which the king chooses to transact in person, he may do it, but not without the approbation of the premier.

Governors.

There shall be four governors over these Hawaiian Islands—one for Hawaii, one for Maui and the islands ad-

jacent, one for Oahu, and one for Kauai and the adjacent islands. All the governors from Hawaii to Kauai shall be subject to the king.

The prerogatives of the governors and their deputies shall be as follow. Each governor shall have the general direction of the several tax-gatherers of the island, and shall support them in the execution of their orders, which he considers to have been properly given, but shall pursue a course according to law, and not according to his own private views. He also shall preside over all the judges of his island, and shall see their sentences executed as above. He shall also appoint the judges and give them their certificates of office.

All the governors from Hawaii to Kauai, shall be subject not only to the king but also to the premier.

The governor shall be the superior over his particular island or islands. He shall have charge of the munitions of war,—under the direction of the king, however, and the premier. He shall have charge of the forts, the soldiery, the arms, and all the implements of war. He shall receive the government dues, and shall deliver over the same to the premier. All important decisions rest with him in times of emergency, unless the king or premier be present. He shall have charge of all the king's business on the island, the taxation, new improvements to be extended, and plans for the increase of wealth, and all officers shall be subject to him. He shall also have power to decide all questions, and transact all island business which is not by law assigned to others.

When either of the governors shall decease, then all the chiefs shall assemble at such place as the king shall appoint, and shall nominate a successor of the deceased governor, and whosoever they shall nominate and be approved by the king, he shall be the new governor.

Respecting the Subordinate Chiefs.

At the present period, these are the persons who shall sit in the government councils; Kamehameha III, Hoaphiliwahine Kuakini, Kekauonohi, Kahekili, Paki, Konia, Keohokalole, Leleiohoku, Kekuanaoa, Kealiiahonua, Kanaina, Keonili, Keoni Ana, and Heralilio! Should any other person be received into the council, it shall be made known by law. These persons shall have part in councils of the kingdom. No law of the nation shall be passed without their assent. They shall act in the following manner. They shall assemble annually for the purpose of seeking the welfare of the nation, and establishing laws for the kingdom. Their meeting shall commence in April, at such day and place as the king shall appoint.

It shall also be proper for the king to consult with the above persons, respecting all the great concerns of the kingdom, in order to promote unanimity and secure the greatest good. They shall, moreover, transact such other business as the king shall commit to them.

That they shall retain their own appropriate lands, whether district or plantations, or whatever divisions they may be, and they may conduct the business on the said lands at their discretion, but not at variance with the laws of the kingdom.

Respecting the Representative Body.

There shall be annually chosen, certain persons to sit in council with the chiefs and established lords of the nation. They shall be chosen by the people, according to their wish, from Hawaii, Maui, Oahu and Kauai. The law shall decide the form of choosing them, and also the number of the chosen. This representative body shall have a voice in the business of the kingdom. No law shall be passed without the approbation of the majority of them.

Respecting the Meetings of the Legislative Body.

There shall be an annual meeting as stated above, but if the chiefs think it desirable to meet again, they may do it at their discretion.

When they assemble, the chiefs shall meet by themselves, and the representative body by themselves, though at such time as they shall think it necessary to consult together, they may unite at their discretion.

The form of doing business shall be as follows: The chiefs shall appoint a secretary for themselves, who, at the meetings shall record all decisions made by them; and that book of records shall be preserved in order that no decrees affecting the interests of the kingdom may be lost.

The same shall be done by the representative body. They too shall choose a secretary for themselves, and when they meet for the purpose of seeking the interests of the kingdom, and shall come to a decision on any point, then that decision shall be recorded in a book, and the book shall be preserved, in order that nothing valuable affecting the interest of the kingdom shall be lost; and there shall no new law be made without the approbation of a majority of the chiefs, and also a majority of the representative body.

When any act has been agreed upon by them, it shall then be presented to the king, and if he approve and sign his name, and also the premier, then it shall become the law of the kingdom, and that law shall not be repealed unless it be done by the name of those who established it.

Of Changes in the Constitution.

The Constitution shall not be considered as finally established, until the people have generally heard it, and have appointed persons according to the provisions herein made, and they have given their assent, then the constitution shall be considered as permanently established.

But if hereafter it should be thought desirable to change

it, notice shall be previously given, that all the people may understand the nature of the proposed change; and the succeeding year, at the meeting of the chiefs and the representative body, if they shall agree as to the addition proposed, or as to the alteration, then they may make it.

The above constitution has been agreed to by the chiefs, and we have hereunto subscribed our names, this eighth day of October, in the year of our Lord 1840, at Honolulu, Oahu.

Signed KAMEHAMEHA III.
KEKAULUOHI.

SANDWICH ISLANDS.

OFFICIAL.

[Copy.]

DECLARATION.

Her Majesty the Queen of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and His Majesty the King of the French, taking into consideration the existence in the Sandwich Islands of a Government capable of providing for the regularity of its relations with Foreign Nations, have thought it right to engage, reciprocally, to consider the Sandwich Islands as an independent state, and never to take possession, either directly or under the title of Protectorate, or under any other form, of any part of the territory of which they are composed.

The undersigned, her Britannic Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, and the Ambassador Extraordinary of his Majesty the King of the French, at

the court of London, being furnished with the necessary powers, hereby declare, in consequence, that their said majesties take reciprocally that engagement.

In witness whereof, the undersigned have signed the present declaration, and have affixed thereto the seals of their arms.

Done in duplicate at London, the twenty-eighth day of November, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and forty-three.

(Signed) ABERDEEN. L.S.

[Copie.]

DÉCLARATION.

Sa Majesté la Reine du Royaume Uni de la Grande Bretagne et d'Irlande, et sa Majesté le Roi des Français, prenant en considération l'existence dans les Isles Sandwich d'un Gouvernement capable de pourvoir à la régularité de leurs rapports avec les nations étrangères, ont cru devoir s'engager réciproquement à considérer les Isles Sandwich comme un État indépendant, et à ne jamais prendre possession ni directement, ni à titre de Protectoral, ni sous aucune autre forme, d'aucune partées des territoires dont il se compose.

Les soussignés, Principal Secrétaire d'État pour les Affaires Étrangères de Sa Majesté Britannique, et Ambassadeur Extraordinaire de Sa Majesté le Roi des Français, près la cour de Londres, munis des pourvoirs nécessaires, déclarent, en conséquence, par les présentes, que leurs dites Majestés prenant réciproquement cet engagement.

En foi de quoi, les soussignés, ont signé la présente déclaration, et y fait apposer le scellé de leurs armes.

Fait double à Londres, le vignt-huit Novembre, l'an de Grace mil huit cent quarente trois.

(Signé) ST. AULAIRE.

TREATIES

BETWEEN THE KINGDOMS OF THE

HAWAIIAN ISLANDS, FRANCE, AND GREAT BRITAIN.

SIGNED AT HONOLULU, MARCH 26, 1846.

BRITISH TREATY.

It being desirable that a general convention should be substituted for the various instruments of mutual agreement at present existing between Great Britain and the Sandwich Islands, the following articles have, for that purpose and to that intent, been mutually agreed upon and signed between the Governments of Great Britain and the Sandwich Islands; and it has been determined that any other treaty, or conventional agreement, now existing between the respective parties, shall be henceforward abrogated and considered null and of no effect.

ARTICLE I.

There shall be perpetual peace and amity between Her Majesty the Queen of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and the King of the Sandwich Islands, their heirs and successors.

ARTICLE II.

The subjects of Her Britannic Majesty residing within the dominions of the King of the Sandwich Islands, shall enjoy the same protection in regard to their civil rights as well as to their persons and properties, as native subjects; and the King of the Sandwich Islands engages to grant to

British subjects the same rights and privileges which now are, or hereafter may be, granted to or enjoyed by any other foreigners, subjects of the most favoured nation.

ARTICLE III.

No British subject accused of any crime whatever shall be judged otherwise than by a jury composed of native or foreign residents, proposed by the British Consul and accepted by the Government of the Sandwich Islands.

ARTICLE IV.

The protection of the King of the Sandwich Islands shall be extended to all British vessels, their officers and crews. In case of shipwreck, the chiefs and inhabitants of the different parts of the Sandwich Islands shall succour them and secure them from plunder. The salvage dues shall be regulated, in case of dispute, by arbitrators chosen by both parties.

ARTICLE V.

The desertion of seamen embarked on board of British vessels shall be severely repressed by the local authorities; who shall employ all the means at their disposal to arrest deserters; and all reasonable expenses of capture shall be defrayed by the captains or owners of the said vessels.

ARTICLE VI.

British merchandise or goods recognised as coming from the British dominions, shall not be prohibited, nor shall they be subject to an import duty higher than five per cent *ad valorem*. Wines, brandies, and other spirituous liquors, are however excepted from this stipulation, and shall be liable to such reasonable duty as the Hawaiian Government may think fit to lay upon them, provided always that the amount

of duty shall not be so high as absolutely to prohibit the importation of the said articles.

ARTICLE VII.

No tonnage, import or other duties, shall be levied on British vessels, or goods imported in British vessels, beyond what are levied on vessels or goods of the most favoured nation.

ARTICLE VIII.

The subjects of the King of the Sandwich Islands shall, in their commercial or other relations with Great Britain, be treated on the footing of the most favoured nation.

Done at Honolulu the 26th of March, 1846.

WM. MILLER. H. B. M.'s Consul-General for the Islands in the Pacific Ocean. [L.S.]	R. C. WYLLIE, His Hawaiian Majesty's Minister of Foreign Relations. [L.S.]

IOANE II.
Member of the Treasury Board.
[L.S.]

FRENCH TREATY.

Le temps ayant démontré la convenance de substituer un traité général aux diverses conventions mutuellement consenties jusqu'ici par la France et les Iles Sandwich, les Gouvernements Français et Havaien sont réciproquement convenus des articles suivants, et les ont signés après avoir reconnu et arrêté que tout autre traité ou convention, actuellement existant entre les parties contractantes, serait désormais considéré comme nul et de nul effet.

ARTICLE I.

Il y aura paix et amitié perpétuelles entre S. M. le Roi des Français et le Roi des Iles Sandwich, entre leurs héritiers et successeurs.

ARTICLE II.

Les sujets de S. M. le Roi des Français demeurant dans les possessions du Roi des Iles Sandwich, jouiront, quant aux droit civils, et pour ce qui regarde leurs personnes et leurs propriétés, de la même protection que s'ils étaient sujets indigènes, et le Roi des Iles Sandwich s'engage à leur accorder les mêmes droits et priviléges, que ceux accordés maintenant, ou qui pourront être accordés plus tard aux sujets de la nation la plus favorisée.

ARTICLE III.

Aucun Français accusé d'un crime ou délit quelconque, ne pourra être jugé que par un juré composé de résidens indigènes, ou étrangers proposés par le Consul de France, et agréés par le Gouvernement des Iles Sandwich.

ARTICLE IV.

Le Roi des Iles Sandwich étendra sa protection sur les navires Français, leurs officiers et équipages : en cas de naufrage les chef et habitans des différentes parties des Isles Sandwich devront leur porter secours et les garantir de tout pillage.

Les indemnités de sauvetage seront réglées, en cas de difficulté, par des arbitres nommés par les deux parties.

ARTICLE V.

La désertion des marins embarqués à bord des navires Français sera sévèrement réprimé par les autorités locales,

qui devront user de tous les moyens à leur disposition pour arrêter les déserteurs. Toute dépense faite dans de juste limites pour s'emparer d'eux sera remboursée par les capitaines ou propriétaires des dits navires.

ARTICLE VI.

Les marchandises Françaises ou reconnues comme venant des possessions Françaises, ne pourront être prohibées ou soumises à un droit d'entrée plus élevé qui celui de 5 per cent ad valorem. Les vins, eaux de vie, et autres liqueurs spiritueuses, sont exceptés, et pourront être soumis à tout droit équitable, dont le Gouvernement des Iles Sandwich jugera convenable de les frapper, mais à condition que ce droit ne sera jamais assez élevé pour devenir un empêchement absolu à l'importation des dits articles.

ARTICLE VII.

Les droits de tonnage ou d'importation, ou tout autre droit levé sur des navires Français, ou sur des marchandises importées par des navires Français, ne devront point excéder les droits imposés aux navires, ou aux marchandises de la nation la plus favorisée.

ARTICLE VIII.

Les sujets du Roi des Iles Sandwich seront traités sur le pied de la nation la plus favorisée, dans leurs relations commerciales ou autres avec la France.

Fait à Honolulu, le 26 Mars, 1846.

EM. PERRIN,
Consul de France, Chargé d'une Mission Spéciale aux Iles Sandwich.
[L.S.]

R. C. WYLLIE,
His Hawaiian Majesty's Minister of Foreign Relations.
[L.S.]

IOANE II.
Member of the Treasury Board.
[L.S.]

TAXATION IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

SCHEDULE, IN DOLLARS AND CENTS, POLITELY COMMUNICATED BY MR. JUDD, MINISTER OF FINANCE.

POLL TAX.

Every able-bodied Hawaiian adult male - - -	100
Every able-bodied Hawaiian adult female - -	50
Every male aged from 15 to 20 years - - -	50
Every female aged from 15 to 20 years - - -	25

School Tax.

(Called also Paahao Poalua and Labour Tax.)

Every able-bodied man, *a tenant of land*, is liable to be called out during 13 weeks, 3 days in the week (every year) - - -	Days	39
During 13 weeks, one day per week - -		13
	Days	52
Every able-bodied man, *not a tenant*, is liable to work on this tax 26 weeks, 3 days in the week -	Days	84

This tax may be commuted for 1 Rial per diem, or $2 paid in advance in cash or $3 in produce. The avails are all devoted to education.

Both classes are liable to a Road Tax of 12 days in the year, or to pay $1·50.

Tenants are required by law at present to labour for their Landlords 13 weeks, 3 days in the week

	Days	39
and 13 weeks, 1 day in the week		13
		52

This is a private right of the Landlord, and there is no legal commutation except the Rial per day. Many take $2·50 or 3·00 per annum.

From this it appears, that the tax for Government in labour, is, for Schools (per annum) - Days 84

for Roads (per annum) - Days 12

96

Reckoned at 1 Rial per day is $12

In Cash it is for Government.

Poll Tax - - - -	$1·00
School Tax - - -	2·00
Road Tax - - -	1·50
	4·50

The commutation for the School Tax is of recent origin, and the number of days' labour was not reduced, in order to induce people to commute.

Horses - - -	per annum	50 cts.
Mules and Asses - - - -		25
Dogs and Cats - - - -		100

No other direct taxes are collected from the natives. The labour tax will soon be abolished.

G. P. J.

DEPOSITION.

MUTINY AND HORRIBLE MASSACRE AT SEA.

"Schooner Amelia. Tuesday, Oct. 3, 1848.—About four bells in the middle watch, a tremendous noise on deck —yelling and hallooing—starboard watch on deck. The second mate, Kitano, had gone forward at the time, in consequence of the swinging-boom guy having given way. He was immediately fallen upon by three men, Josse Torris, Andrew Baldibego, and Josè Calero, and left dying upon the deck. Captain Alva hearing the noise, came on deck, and asked what was the occasion of the noise. The ringleader, Torris, told him, Nothing, only a bad wind. Mr. Cook, passenger, came up after the captain. As the latter was retreating aft, he was attacked by the three men and stabbed in several places. He, however, managed to get down into the cabin, and in reaching for a cutlass endeavoured to make Mr. McNally, who had just turned out on hearing the noise, comprehend what was going on. He then, with the cutlass in hand, gained the top of the companion, but was stabbed mortally by two men, one on each side; he fell back and staggered into the cabin, and expired. Mr. Cook, seeing the captain running aft, pursued by the murderers, endeavoured to get down into the cabin, but was stabbed through the back, left a little while on deck, and afterwards thrown overboard. The murderers then went forward, called the larboard watch, and showing their bloody knives, told them they had murdered all aft except Mr. McNally, English master, Mrs. Cook, and her servant Mary Hudson: and that they were in command of the vessel, and if one of them refused

to obey their orders, they would murder him immediately. They then threw the body of the second mate overboard, and commanded the ship to be put about and steered for the coast of Peru. The remainder of the crew had no arms to defend themselves, and if the least hesitation was shown, the knife was at their throats. They then went down into the hold and brought up large stones and pieces of lead, which were laid on the deck for the purpose of killing Mr. McNally. About 8 A.M. they spoke (by the carpenter) to Mr. McNally, assuring him that if he had laid down his arms and submitted quietly, they would not take his life. He would not consent to that, but told them that if they would allow him with the females to be put, with what things he required, into the gig and sent adrift, he would not trouble them at all, but would show them what course to take for the place they wanted to go. The three then spoke together, and answered that what he required should be done. They then passed the necessaries they wished to take with him on deck, and one of them went down and got the course for Malabeigo from him. Trusting to their faith he went on deck unarmed. They had put the ship about and given pretended orders for lowering the boat, but seeing it was not done, he went to the cabin skylight and told the females not to come up then as the boat was not ready. He was stepping from the skylight to the side of the vessel, when he was seized upon and thrown overboard. The murderers then filled upon the vessel, and ordered all sail to be made. They then went down into the cabin, took all the gold they could find and brought it on deck, making every one in the vessel take his share. They then dressed themselves in the clothes belonging to the murdered, destroyed all papers they thought offensive, with many valuables which were thrown overboard. The captain's body was tied up and with heavy weights sunk. They were shifting clothes four or five times a-day, and parading the decks. They commanded the jib-topsail to be cut away, fitted new swinging-boom gear and main guys.

"Wednesday, 4th. John Smith, born in Rotterdam, Holland; William Christiansan, Norway; Frank Feering, St. Michael's, Western Islands; John Burringer, Bordeaux, France; Josè Calero, Bilboa, Spain; proposed a plan to take the lives of the murderers that night, and which was communicated to the rest of the crew, four excepted. The carpenter's axe, maul, pump-breaks, boarding-pikes, were to be ready for the purpose. At 4 o'clock p.m., the three murderers brought up a quantity of wine which was offered to the men, in order to make them drunk. This being done, Andrias Baldibego went down into the hold, cut open one of the bags of silver, and brought up some, which he threw about the deck; they then commenced playing together for gold. Afterwards, they got a muster of fire-arms together, trying which was the best, and loaded them with heavy charges. One of them, from the foot of the companion-way, discharged a loaded pistol at the man at the wheel (John Smith), without effect. They then put the arms away for that time, but told the females they should have occasion for them in the morning. They then came on deck, (half past nine p.m.), Josè Calero having the first watch, and who was to call the other two at twelve o'clock. At ten o'clock John Smith was relieved from the wheel and went to the lee-side of the long board, and asked the carpenter if the implements were ready. The carpenter replied, Yes, all ready, but the axe was below. John Smith then went below in the steerage, and brought it up and told the boys, Charles and Thomas, to have the boarding-pikes ready, and should he want the cutlasses to run down in the cabins and hand them up. Josè Calero, who had the watch, then being drunk, struck eight bells at 11 o'clock. He then called out to heave the log. Smith immediately seized the axe, and running aft, dispatched at once the sleeping men (Josè Torris and Andrias Baldibego) when they lay on the deck, whilst Peter, who went to hold the reel, dropped it, and fell upon Josè Calero, trying to get him overboard; but being unable to manage him, John

Smith jumped to the lee side and struck off his right arm with the axe. John then called out for the boys to get the cutlasses, in the event of meeting with any opposition in the four men whom he could not confide in, but they received no opposition. The bodies of the three men were then thrown overboard. John Smith then took command, the rest of the crew being all agreeable to the same. He then went down in the cabin, assured the females of their safety, and consulted with Mrs. Cook as to what would be the best plan to pursue in order to restore the vessel and cargo to their rightful owners. The money was all brought aft, and it was distributed, and placed in the cabin. It was thought best to return to Mazatlan; and accordingly, we steered the nearest course to that place. There was a heavy sea on, with frequent squalls. We took in flying jib, fore-topmast stay-sail, and gaft top-sail. The jib had blown to pieces, being in a bad state of repair. Between six and eight o'clock p.m. the fore top-sail sheet went three times, and the running once. The bowsprit was sprung in two places, and in consequence of the violent working of the vessel was expected to go. The top-gallant-mast had been badly sprung since leaving Mazatlan, and was totally unfit to carry any sail. John Smith then went down in the cabin, acquainting Mrs. Cook with the state of the vessel and aspect of the weather. He thought it best to steer for the nearest land he could make, and which she thought was the best thing that could be done.

"John then called Thomas and Charles down in the cabin, acquainting them with his purpose, and as they were the only persons that knew anything of navigation, although their knowledge was imperfect, he told them to find the course for the Sandwich Islands. He then went on deck and asked the crew if they were contented to take the vessel to Oahu; ready assent was given. Accordingly, at eight o'clock, October 5, the vessel was put before the wind, steering W. by N. half N. for the south port of Hawaii."

The following is a note of Captain McNally, referred to in the above report.

"Half-past four a.m. Captain Alva lying stabbed in the heart, in the cabin; the mutineers have got a muster and are determined on my death. It will soon be day-light, and then the scoundrels will see their way. At present they are afraid of my pistols. I will sell my life dearly. Unto the Almighty I commend my spirit.

"ROBERT L. MCNALLY."

THE END.

London:—Printed by G. BARCLAY, Castle St. Leicester Sq.

d to

the
and
, and
they
nto

3 2044 058 188 996

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED THE COST OF OVERDUE NOTIFICATION IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW.

CANCELLED
WIDENER
MAR 2002
CANCELLED